I Have Never Touched Her:
The Body in Al-Ghazal Al-‘Udhri

Jokha Mohammed Al Harthi

Thesis submitted
for the Degree of Doctor of Philosophy
at the University of Edinburgh
College of Humanities and Social Science
School of Literatures, Languages and Cultures
Department of Islamic and Middle Eastern Studies

2010
To my husband Altayeb, my children Khuzama and Ibrahim, and my sister Zina.
Declaration

I hereby declare that this thesis, which is submitted in fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of doctor of philosophy and entitled "I Have Never Touched Her: The Body in Al-Ghazal Al-‘Udhri”, represents my own work and has not been previously submitted to any other institution for any other degree or professional qualification.

Jokha Mohammed Al Harthi

July 12, 2010
# TABLE OF CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Abstract</td>
<td>ix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acknowledgements</td>
<td>x</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter I: Introduction: A Critical Reappraisal of Scholarship in the 'Udhārī' Tradition</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.1 Al-Ghazal al-'Udhārī: a Brief Historical and Aesthetical Approach.</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.2 The Causes of the Emergence of al-Ghazal al-'Udhārī.</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.3 The Development of the 'Udhārī Phenomenon as a Literary Tradition.</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.4 The Authenticity of al-Ghazal al-'Udhārī.</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.5 A Critical Examination of the Scholarly Field Concerning al-Ghazal al-'Udhārī.</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.6 The Structure and Trajectory of the Thesis.</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter II: Reconstructing the Past</td>
<td>39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.1 Al-Ghazal: the Love Poem</td>
<td>39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.2 The Roots of al-Ghazal al-'Udhārī</td>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.3 Al-ghazal al-ṣarīḥ vs. al-ghazal al-‘udhārī</td>
<td>41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.4 The Important Source: Kitāb al-‘agāhānī</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
2.5 Reconstructing the Past

2.5.1. The Period of Documentation, Criticism and Authorship

2.5.2. Influence of Sufism and the Persian Interest in al-Ghazal al-'Udhri

2.5.3. Moral and Ethical Issues

2.6 Contradictory Texts on Physicality in the ‘Udhri Tradition

Chapter III: ‘Udhri Tradition between Chastity and Sensuality

3.1 Introduction.

3.2 Sources

3.3 The Body in the Qur’an

3.4 Defilement and Purification

3.5 Positive Perspective on Sexuality

3.6 Chastity (‘iffah) between ‘udhri and Islamic discourse

3.7 Marriage in the ‘Udhri Tradition

3.8 Between Platonic and ‘udhri love

3.9 Conclusion

Chapter IV: The Representation of the Beloved’s Body
4.1 Introduction

4.2 The Conventional Pattern of Female Beauty, with Special Reference to Pre-Islamic Literature

4.3 Corporeal Representation: The Physical Description of the Beloved’s Body

4.3.1 The Glow of the Beloved

4.3.2 The Beloved and Gazelle Metaphor

4.3.3 The face of the beloved

4.3.4 The Scent of the Beloved

4.3.5 The Figure of the Beloved

4.4 Layla’s Portrayal in Persian Painting

4.5 The Desirable Image of a Corpulent Female Body

4.6 Al-Ghazal al- ‘Udhri: More than Imitation

4.7 The Ethereal Nature of Beauty

3.8 Conclusion

Chapter V: Present and Absent Bodies of the Beloved

5.1 Introduction
5.2 Bodily Presence
5.2.1 Gestures
5.2.2 Speech
5.3 Bodily Absence
5.3.1 The Phantom of the Beloved
5.3.2 The Beloved’s Place
5.4 Presence through Absence: The Beloved’s Presence in Nature
5.5 Conclusion
Chapter VI: Textuality Vs. Reality
6.1 Introduction
6.2 One Ideal Beloved
6.3 Desire towards Possession
6.4 Poetry and the Absence of the Desire’s Object
6.5 Complaint and Embracement
6.6 The Heroic Gesture
6.7 Conclusion
Chapter VII: The Representation of the Lover’s Body
7.1 Introduction
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>7.2 Love as Malady in Classical Arabic Literature</td>
<td>213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.3 The Effect of Love on the Lover’s Body in ‘Udhri Tradition</td>
<td>219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.3.1 Crying</td>
<td>220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.3.2 Malady and Wasting Away</td>
<td>227</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.3.3 Insomnia</td>
<td>234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.3.4 Prematurely grey-haired</td>
<td>237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.3.5 Fainting</td>
<td>240</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.3.6 Madness</td>
<td>243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.3.7 Death</td>
<td>248</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.4 Conclusion</td>
<td>258</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conclusion</td>
<td>261</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bibliography</td>
<td>270</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Appendices</td>
<td>288</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Appendix I</td>
<td>288</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Appendix II</td>
<td>315</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Abstract

Al-ghazal al-‘udhri emerged as a remarkable literary genre in Arabic literature during the Umayyad period (7th-8th centuries CE). The leaders of this genre are famous poet-lovers who were known for their dramatic love stories and unique poetry, such as Majnūn Laylā, Qays Lubnā and Jamīl Buthaynah. There is a common presumption of the absence of the concept of the body in al-ghazal al-‘udhri; most scholars to date have only reproduced commonly-held ideas about the purity of ‘udhri love without doubting its supposed chastity. This thesis, however, argues that the body has a privileged position in al-ghazal al-‘udhri. It shows that the body’s presence is represented, realistically or allegorically, in various ways, both in anecdotes ascribed to ‘udhri poets as well as in their poetry. Although some critics have discussed the theme of the ‘depiction of the beloved’s body’, it is the contribution of this study to illuminate the ‘ethereal nature of beauty’ in this depiction. Moreover, this thesis provides a discussion about the symbolic body in ‘udhri poetry. It provides a departure from the prevailing views on the ‘udhri phenomenon in studies of classical Arabic literature. It opens the door to new discussions on the relationship between love poetry and Arab society in the classical age. It is also a contribution to literary studies of representations of the body.
Acknowledgements

I would like to express my grateful appreciation to my supervisor Dr. Kamran Rastegar for his kind encouragement and generous help throughout my study. The feedback he gave me is very much useful. I would also like to thank Prof. Carole Hillenbrand for her fruitful discussion of my ideas and her valuable remarks on my work. The guidance Dr. Elisabeth Kendall provided me in the early stages of this thesis are very much appreciated. I also benefited from Prof. Robert Hillenbrand’s insights on the subject of the portrayal of Majnun’s story in Persian art. I want to record also my thanks to Prof. Marilyn Booth for reading my work and suggesting many corrections. I hugely benefited from her experience. In addition, I owe thanks to Dr. Adam Budd, Prof. Ahmad Darwish, Dr. Christian Lange, Prof. Gerard Van Gelder, Dr. Hilal al-Hijri, Prof. Khalil al-Shaikh, Prof. Muhammad al-Tarabulsi, Prof. Muhammad Lutfi al-Yusufi and Prof. Walid Khalis for their expert counsel and I am also most grateful for their suggestions regarding the sources during the early stages of my study. My gratitude goes to Yaqub al-Harthi for his great help with searching for the sources and providing many of them for me. I would like also to record my warm thanks to Alasdair Watson, Ibtihaq al-Harthy, Khalsa al-Aghbari, Ula Zaaer and Zina al-Harthy for their great help in translation of the Arabic texts, especially the poetry. I have been fortunate to receive support and encouragement from my husband Altayeb al-Harthy and from my family and friends, so my warmest gratitude goes to them.
Introduction: A Critical Reappraisal of Scholarship in the ‘Udhri Tradition

‘Udhri, or chaste love poetry celebrates the lofty union of souls between a man and a woman that endures despite societal obstacles and legal limits, eternal beyond even death. ‘Udhri poetry turns the unattainability of physical union with the beloved into a spur to virtue, high devotion, and chivalry in the life of the lover, who ultimately dies as a martyr to love.

This citation, from a popular website, exemplifies certain typical ideas about ‘udhri love and poetry, which I intend to explore in this study. In both popular and academic views, ‘udhri love is nearly always considered as chaste love. In contemporary Arab society people still call chaste love “‘udhri love”. This popular understanding assumes that the concept of the body is absent from the ‘udhri tradition, and likewise, most scholars who have addressed this tradition have simply reiterated these commonly-held ideas about its virtue.

The significance of this study lies in the fact that it will provide a comprehensive appraisal of the subject of the ‘udhri tradition. The term "‘udhri tradition" consists not only of ‘udhri poets and poetry but also the stories told about them. These poets lived in the 7th and 8th centuries, and about two centuries later, their poetry and love stories were collected and retold. This thesis aims to study the reconstructions of the ‘udhri tradition. In my reading, the human body is a vital feature of ‘udhri love and poetry. We can observe its presence, whether physically or allegorically, in a variety of ways, both in the anecdotes ascribed to ‘udhri poets as well as in the poetry itself. In fact, I would argue that some aspect of the body lies at the heart of even the most “chaste” ‘udhri verses. Descriptions of the actual body of the beloved or else its representation symbolically, in its presence or conversely in its

absence, along with depictions of the emaciating and suffering body of the lover-poet are all crucial aspects of the ‘udhrī’ tradition, as my study intends to show.

The stories and poetry of ‘udhrī’ lovers were circulated from the end of the seventh century onwards, appearing in collections by numerous authors. The earliest extant version of the romance is to be found in an anthology of Ibn Qutaybah (d. 276/889), who collected the works of major Arab poets in his al-Shīr wa al-shu’ārā. Shortly after Ibn Qutaybah, Ibn Da‘ūd (d. 297/910) included in his Kitāb al-zahrah some fragments ascribed to ‘udhrī’ poets. Then, al-Iṣfahānī (d. 356/976) presented in his famous work al-Aghānī, a collection of numerous anecdotes and poetic fragments, which were either ascribed to ‘udhrī’ poets like Jamīl and Majnūn, or referred to them. His work is like a ‘mosaic put together out of shards of prose and fragments of poetry’.

Al-Nuwayrī (d. 733/1332), who relates various ‘udhrī’ love stories in his encyclopaedia Nihāyat al-Arāb, states that the ‘udhrī’ martyrs of love were too many to count. In any case, the ‘udhrī’ love stories— in more or less detail—appear in many classical literary works such as, Masāri‘ al-‘ushshāq by Abū Ja‘far al-Sarrāj (d. 500/1106), Rawdat al-muḥbīn by Ibn Qayyim al-Jawziyyah (d. 769/1349) and, Tazyīn al-aswāq by Da‘ūd al-Anṭākī (d. 1008/1599) where ‘udhrī’ poets are

---

3 Dols observes that ‘Curiously the rawiṣ seem to have done far more in this instance than simply develop a romance’, Michael Dols, Majnūn: the Madman in Medieval Islamic Society (Oxford: Clarendon Press; New York: Oxford University Press, 1992), p. 322. Also, Khairallah notes that ‘Ibn Qutaybah presents us with the basic elements of [Majnūn’s] legend. These elements were later expanded and retold in different variations, but the figure of Majnūn was unmistakably drawn by Ibn Qutaybah’. Asad Khairallah, Khairallah Love, Madness, and poetry: An interpretation of the Majnun legend (Beirut: Orient-institut der Deutschen Morgenlandischen Gesellschaft, 1980), p. 50.

4 This work by al-Iṣfahānī will be the main source of narratives told about ‘udhrī’ poets and discussed in this thesis. Its authenticity will be discussed later in this chapter; see pp 17-35. The structure of al-Aghānī will be discussed in the second chapter.

transformed into the heroes of romantic stories. During the early ‘Abbasid period, ‘udhrī romances were very popular, numerous verses having been set to music.6

Modern scholarly approaches to the subject tend to fall into the following broad categories: some focus on the aesthetic side of ‘udhrī love, whilst the majority address its historical and psychological dimensions. Other studies concentrate on one particular poet of this genre.7 However, to the best of my knowledge, no studies have been undertaken on the depiction of the body in ‘udhrī poetry or on the themes of sensuality contained within it.8 This issue has only partially been investigated through a small number of general studies, and even then mostly from a limited perspective. Hence, it is hoped that this study will form a more comprehensive appraisal of the subject. It will consider two specific points which have not previously been given the attention they deserve; how the attitude of the poet towards the body of the beloved is expressed, either literally or allegorically, in the ‘udhrī tradition, and how the effect of ardent love on the lover’s own body is depicted. Particularly careful consideration will be given to the attitude toward love and the body in Arab Islamic culture and its influence on the ‘udhrī tradition. Another main concern of this study is to reconstruct the ‘udhrī tradition. This is the first study devoted to the ‘udhrī tradition to be written in English and the first to focus entirely on the presence of the body in the ‘udhrī tradition in either Arabic or English. Previous thematic studies, as will be discussed, either overlook the subject or address only one particular poet of this genre.

6 As observed in classic sources such as, Abu al-Faraj al-Iṣfahānī, al-Aghānī (Beirut: Dar iḥya’ al-ṭurath al-‘arabī, 1997),
7 These studies will be discussed in detail later in this chapter.
8 Except for one study which deals with secrecy and sexuality in the romance of Majnūn Laylā, a poet in the ‘udhrī school. The author of this study is Ruqayya Khan and we shall discuss her work later in the introduction.
1.1 Al-Ghazal al-‘Udhri: a Brief Historical and Aesthetic Approach

Al-Ghazal al-‘Udhri is named after the ‘Udhrah tribe which supplied this poetical tradition with many of its leading poets. Members of this tribe were generally said to have tender hearts and to seek after a true love that usually led to death\(^1\). The ‘udhrā poet Jamīl b. ‘Abdallah b. Ma‘mar, better known as Jamīl Buthaynah (d.82\(\bar{7}\)01), who is considered the leading light of this genre, was from the ‘Udhrah tribe. Nevertheless, there were ‘udhrā poets from other tribes, such as Majnūn Laylā, who belonged to the Banū ‘Amir. As one scholar has observed, ‘the term ‘udhrā was then used more broadly for a whole school of self-immolating poets of the central Arabian desert\(^2\).

‘Udhra love is a fatal love that leads to death. The ‘udhrā loves only one woman, devoting his life and poetry to her; only rarely composing verses in another genre, such as praise (madhli) or satire (hija‘). The beloved is portrayed in al-ghazal al-‘udhrā as an ideal woman, and her poet lover as a martyr of love. The recurring

---

\(^9\) Ghazal: song, elegy of love, often also the erotic-elegiac genre. The term is Arabic, but passed into Persian, Turkish and Urdu and acquired a special sense in these languages. A. Bausani, EI, vol. 2, 4th impression, “Ghazal” (Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1991), p. 1028.

\(^10\) A nomadic Arabian tribe of the Qud’āa federation. Its pedigree is: ‘Udhra b. Sa‘d Hudhaym b. Zayd b. Layth. The ‘Udhra were the central group among the descendants of Sa‘d Hudhaym, and they incorporated several brother-clans such as the Harith b. Sa‘d Hudhaym and Salmān b. Sa‘d Hudhaym. These ‘Udhra are not to be confused with the ‘Udhra of Kalb b. Wabara, i.e. ‘Udra b. Zayd Allat b. Rufayda b. Thawr b. Kalb. One of the latter ‘Udhra was the genealogist Ibn al-Kalbi, who described the ‘Udra b. Zayd Allat at length. The ‘Udra lived in the area of Ashraf/Masharif al-Shām, which in this context refers to the northern Hijāz. They were particularly linked with Wadi Al-Qura’. Michael Lecker, *People, tribes, and society in Arabia around the time of Muhammad* (Aldershot: Ashgate, 2005), p. 91.


theme of suffering and torment in love is strong in the ‘udhrī tradition. Another characteristic of al-ghazal al-‘udhrī is the use of certain symbolic conventions and imagery.

The most important figures of ‘udhrī love are ‘Urwah b. Ḥizām (d. 30/650), Majnūn Laylā (d.c. 68/688), Qays b. Dhariḥ (d. 68/688), Jamīl Buthaynah (d. 82/701), and Kuthayyir ‘Azzah (d. 105/723). However, some scholars include other poets in the udhrī school such as Dhū al-Rummah (d. 117/735) and ‘Abbās b. al-ʾAḥnaf (d. 188/804). But the question of how to categorize these poets is still under debate: for example, not all scholars accept Kuthayyir ‘Azzah as an ‘udhrī poet. In addition, one may argue that Dhū al-Rummah, in spite of his body of love poetry dedicated to his beloved Mayy, is concerned with different themes from the ones usually popular with ‘udhrī poets and, moreover, his love story differs from ‘udhrī love stories. Going further, while ‘Abbās b. al-ʾAḥnaf composes beautiful love poetry for his beloved Fawz, and while in many respects, some of his themes are similar to ‘udhrī themes, there is also a description of an orgy with singing girls in his poetry, which would be an unimaginable subject in ‘udhrī poetry. Moreover, al-‘Abbās’s cultural environment was completely different from the ‘udhrī environment and his poetry is closer to the manner of courtly love poetry. Given the controversies

---

15 This pretence can be traced back to the classical source al-Aghānī, where Abu al-Faraj al-ʾIṣfahānī (d. 967/356) quotes anecdotes that show that Kuthayyir was not an honest lover like the other ‘udhrī lovers, but that he just tried to imitate them. However, in my understanding, Kuthayyir’s love story and his poetry would indicate that he is a true ‘udhrī poet.
16 This name is a pseudonym to conceal her true identity and protect her reputation.
17 Among these themes are the suffering lover, the longing for an aloof beloved, and the death-wish.
over whether some of these poets should be considered as part of this genre, I will focus only on those who are unambiguously considered to be ‘udhri poets.

Scholars do not differ sharply in historical detail about the ‘udhri poets, but they are at variance in their interpretations of these details, which I intend to deal with later. I am not concerned here with citing anecdotes about the ‘udhri romances, as these can very easily be found in classical Arabic books such as al-Aghānī and Maṣārī al-‘uṣhāq. Rather, I intend to show briefly the common tropes present in these love stories. A considerable number of scholars have observed the striking similarities between the romances of various ‘udhri poets — to explain this, Jayyusi suggests that:

The pattern of the ‘udhri love poetry and love tale was set early in pre-Islamic times. The earliest ‘udhri love poet in the Umayyad age was ‘Urwah b. Ḥizām, and his tragic love story sets the pattern for the numerous love stories of the Umayyad period.‘Urwah b. Ḥizām, in fact, lived before the Umayyad period and died during the caliphate of ‘Uthmān b. ‘Affān. However, Jayyusi is correct about ‘the pattern of the ‘udhri love poetry and love tale’, which was set in pre-Islamic times. In pre-Islamic poetry we have the stories of ‘Abdallah b. ‘Ajlān, Hind’s lover, and al-Muraqqash al-Akbar, ‘Asmā’s lover, both of whom suffered love unto death. Nevertheless, al-Baṭal points out that in al-ghazal al-‘udhri, new elements were introduced to the pre-Islamic stories to express the greater complexity of the new Islamic society, such as people’s rejection of new social roles set by the Umayyad authorities. This may explain why ‘udhri love stories revolve around the same themes. The typical

---

components of the ‘udhri poets’ sentimental tales are 20. The lover meets his beloved either during their childhood when they used to tend their families’ flocks of sheep in the desert, or they meet as adults in a sudden encounter. They fall deeply into a love which continues until death and the lover consequently composes poetry describing his fatal love for his beloved. However, his beloved’s parents turn down his marriage proposal, due to the disgrace that his verses have brought upon both their daughter and themselves -- this, in spite of the fact that they are from the same tribe and sometimes from the same family. In some cases, demand for an exorbitant dowry prevents the marriage, so the lover goes to seek wealth while the parents force their daughter to marry another man, who generally has fewer good qualities than her lover. Then, the beloved travels away with her husband. Her marriage intensifies her lover’s passion, so the brokenhearted poet chases his beloved and recites beautiful poetry which circulates far and wide, describing her beauty and his suffering. He continues in his endeavours to visit her after her marriage and they remain faithful to each other until death. As a result of the poet’s insistence on seeing his beloved and composing poetry about her, her parents complain to the ruler who decrees that killing him is permissible. The ruler exiles him and the exiled poet wanders in the desert. In some accounts, his passion leads him into madness, but whenever he remembers his beloved, poetic inspiration comes. Eventually, the lovers die soon after one another and--in some accounts--are buried next to each other.

These episodes are motifs that are found in a number of ‘udhri romances. It is irrelevant for this study to review the minor differences between these stories. Instead, it is important to bear in mind the wider lines that constitute the essential

20 It is in no way intended that these literary works should be reduced to simple formulae; however, I have tried to highlight some of their key unifying components.
framework of the love story, at the same time noting the way the structure is
dependent upon symbolism. The legendary tropes in these stories can be observed
through certain common features, namely, as al-Baṭal notes, the ambiguity
surrounding the identity of the composers of these romances, and the repeated motifs
within every single story which make all the ‘udhri stories concentrate on one theme,
regardless of the minor differences in details.\(^{21}\) As I have mentioned, these stories
were collected and retold about one and a half centuries after the ‘udhri poets’
deaths. In the second chapter, I shall discuss the documentation that was particularly
notable in the Abbasid era. The necessity to reconstruct the past, as we will see, was
due to several factors and manifested in many aspects. However, at this point, it is
hard to separate the poetry and the narratives attached to it as it appeared in classical
Arabic sources, especially in al-Aghānī. The narratives serve to elucidate the poetry,
creating appropriate contexts, while the poetry illuminates the stories.

As one can see, the main characteristic of the plot is the poet's total devotion
to love, this sentiment infusing all ‘udhri stories and poetry. The lovers are depicted
purely as idols of love so the reader knows nothing of their lives beyond this passion.
The sentiments of love and the accompanying agony are told in ‘udhri poetry in a
myriad ways. The lovers ‘did not want to get rid of their pain, because pain is the
only genuine criterion of true love.\(^{22}\)

The beloved becomes the ideal of a timeless woman and seems to be almost
immortal. ‘Time cannot touch her, nor can her beauty and perception change.’\(^{23}\) Her
depiction in ‘udhri poetry reminds us of the houri who never ages, as described in the

\(^{21}\) Al-Baṭal, p. 181.
\(^{22}\) Ahmad Khaldun Kinany, The Development of Gazal in Arabic Literature (Pre-Islamic and Early
\(^{23}\) Jauyyysi, p. 426.
Qur'an. Although houris are not described as passionate or even as lovers in the Qur'an, their eternal youth and beauty inspire the ‘udhrī poet who insists on drawing an out-of-time image for his beloved. The desert, being spacious and still, provides an appropriate setting for the unfolding of ‘udhrī love stories. This vast tranquil space implies stability, which is compatible with the concept of unchanging time in ‘udhrī poetry. So the desert is an ideal backdrop symbolizing immutability and timelessness. The reader of ‘udhrī stories and poetry loses all sense of time within the events of the love stories. Time seems to stop for the lovers as their passion tends to be detached and unaffected by temporality. Jacobi notes: ‘Whereas the poet of the Djāhīlyyiq [sic] abandons a futile love-affair of the past, the ‘udhrī poet perseveres in the face of hopelessness and despair. His love is preordained by fate and transcends death.’

As their poetry shows, the ‘udhrī poets, Kinany notes ‘were so possessed by their delirious passion that they came to believe that life without the beloved was meaningless.’ Majnūn, when he lost his beloved, felt:

\[ \text{As if the mountain-roads were the circle of rings} \\
\text{Around me, never increasing in length or breadth} \]

The intimate relationship between love and death is a crucial element of the ‘udhrī experience. Most of the lovers die because of their fatal love and so their poetry is

---

24 For example, in Sura al-Wāqī‘ah, the verses describing the situation in heaven read: ‘And on couches or thrones, raised high. Verily, We have created them (maidens) of special creation. And made them virgins. Loving (their husbands only), (and) of equal age. For those on the Right Hand’. Al-Wāqī‘ah (56: 34-38).
26 Kinany, p. 266.
full of references to death. ‘Such love is almost of necessity tragic. And its tragedy is a symbol of the incompatibility of the absolute and the concrete, of the ideal and the real life’.

As we have seen from the components of their tales, any love adventure needs the involvement of secondary characters to be foils for the main characters. A passionate love adventure could not be narrated without obstacles being created by others. These obstacles enliven the story, and also help to make it eternal. The existence of others is the best guarantee for an everlasting and infinite love. In ‘udhri stories the central theme is that the obstacles cannot be overcome, and neither can the love be given up. Jacobi suggests that ‘the conflict is obviously situated between generations: the parents represent the tribal community, against which the implicit polemics of the ‘udhri model are directed’. It is noteworthy that in ‘udhri stories the lovers are rejected in one way or another by society, thus they are expelled out of society to the world of the desert, which symbolises their exclusion. Therefore, the figure of the blamer is a familiar figure in al-ghazal al-‘udhri. The function of the blamer is to persuade the lover-poet to be more moderate or—in other words—to prevent the protagonist from making the heroic gestures. But, for these poets, love was their chief object, it was a way of life and gave purpose to life.

---

28 As we shall examine in the last chapter of this thesis.
31 Renate Jacobi, Die Udhra: Liebe und Tod in der Umayyadenzeit.
32 See, for example, Majnun, pp. 179, 184, 190.
34 Majnun says: ‘they said that I could forget her if I wanted to; I answered them that I did not really want to’. Cited and translated by Kinany, p. 276.
The ‘udhri’ poet does not want any woman other than his beloved, as she is preferable to any other creature and the lover’s passion surpasses that of all other lovers, his beloved surpassing all other women. He would be pleased with very little from her and she is both the cause of and the only cure for the poet’s misery.

Intensity, despair and faithfulness are central to the love stories of the ‘udhri’ poets. Their poetry concerns itself with the description of the lovers’ suffering and yearning, and it also portrays their unattainable love as well as expressing their wishes and hopes for the future. Although it is true that the beloved in ‘udhri’ poetry is typically portrayed as an aloof and inaccessible woman, nevertheless, I disagree with Kinany and Jayyusi who claim that ‘udhri’ love is an unrequited love. I would argue that the portrayal of the beloved as an aloof woman is rather a convention of classical Arabic poetry. Further chapters in this study will discuss this point in detail, and meanwhile, I will provide one example from Jamīl’s poetry on Buthaynah that shows the two lovers involved in passion:

We were both on the point of crying for each other,
And her tears were quicker than mine.

---

35 Note, for instance, Jamīl’s verses:
I am pleased with very little things accorded to me by Buthaynah
They are so insignificant
that if they were known by the man (who spies us)
he would not be annoyed with my love
I am pleased even when she says: “no” or “I cannot”
And when she makes me live on promises
promises hoped for, but always disappointing
I am pleased with a quick glance to her,
and even with spending a whole year without our meeting—
neither at the beginning nor at the end

36 Majnun, for instance, says: ‘I cured my suffering from missing Layla by remembering her, just as a drunkard who has no other cure, for his pain, but drink’. Majnun, p. 120, trans. Kinany, p. 281.

37 Kinany, p. 253.
38 Kinany, p. 278.
39 See Kinany, p. 257 and Jayyusi, p. 425.
40 Jamil, p. 73, trans. Kinany, p. 289.
1.2 The Causes of the Emergence of al-Ghazal al-‘Udhrī

Al-Ghazal al-‘udhrī, like any other literary phenomenon, is complex and does not exist in a vacuum, being a result of many interrelated factors: religious, political, psychological, literary and historical. In Tāha Ḥusayn’s view, this phenomenon is best explained by the sudden rise of languorous opulence in Mecca and Medina, cities that had lost their political weight in spite of having grown rich. Hence, the wealthy poets in urban areas pursued profane love poetry, and the hopelessly poor poets in Bedouin tribes pursued ‘udhrī poetry. Clearly, Ḥusayn relies on a vaguely formulated sociology of rising expectations and another scholar, Labīb al-Ṭāhir, has further developed Ḥusayn’s argument by linking the socio-economic factors of the tribe ‘udhrāḥ with the emergence of ‘udhrī love. However, the examples al-Ṭāhir uses of poets who do not belong to this tribe, like Majnūn, who is from Banū ‘Āmir, make the link between this poetry and the specific economic situation of the Banū ‘udhrāḥ rather weak. Moreover, social factors may have played a part in the emergence of these tales, but on the other hand we should be careful not to try to explain everything simply by the social environment.

To explain its emergence, Kinany associates al-ghazal al-‘udhrī with Islamic monotheism, eschatology and ethics. He, for example, says: ‘The Muslim religion had a bearing on all the aspects of ‘udhrī love which we have studied so far, namely chastity, faithfulness, despair, resignation, the personification of love and the

---

41 Tāha Ḥusayn, Ḥadīth al-arbi’a’, 12th edition (Cairo: Dar al-ma‘ārif, 1976), p. 109. However, see al-Ḥuфи’s arguments that attempt to controvert Ḥusayn’s views, pp. 153-158.
43 Kinany, p. 262
conception of an eternal passion. Shukri Fayṣal also emphasises the religious factor in the emergence of the ‘udhri’ phenomenon, as Islam purified people’s souls.

Fayṣal says:

From the chastity that was driven by religion and the love that was driven by desire emerged the ‘udhri’ love. It was necessary for devout Muslims who were not so successful in their love to express this failure in one way or another. Subsequently, they found solace in poetry, a verbal art, a leeway to express their emotions; because ‘udhri’ love mirrored chaste and desirous love at the same time. So, this compensatory type of poetry was there to suppress the heat of emotions and elevate the desires.

Dāyf, likewise, argues that following the ethical basis of Islam, ‘udhri’ poetry is characterised by chastity and perfection. However, in spite of the popularity of Fayṣal’s argument among contemporary scholars, his limitation of the circumstances that led to the emergence of ‘udhri’ love to Islamic and societal factors opens a door to further discussion. There is no evidence that the Bedouin poets were more influenced by the moral teaching of Islam than other poets. In fact, to say that the Islamic influence was stronger on the Bedouin tribes than on the urban tribes is misleading for two reasons. Firstly, the Bedouin tribes are described in the Qur’an as hypocritical and unrighteous. Secondly, during the Umayyad era there were unquestionably more religious men in Makkah and Madinah than among the Bedouin tribes (al-fuqaha al-shu’ara’); religious poets such as ‘Urwah b. Udhaynah and ‘Abd al-Rahmān al-Quss lived in Madinah, not in the Bedouin desert. Moreover,

44 Ibid.
46 Ibid., p. 287.
47 Dāyf, al-ḥabb al-‘udhri ḍand al-‘Arab, p. 20.
49 Al-Tawbah (9: 97).
many elements in the anecdotes ascribed to ‘udhrī poets present elements contradictory to what are predominantly considered the ethical principles of Islam\textsuperscript{50}.

In any case, I would argue that the influence of Islam on al-ghazal al-‘udhrī did go beyond the poetic images and structures, but the influence did not include the Islamic model of the relationship between man and woman. Thus, it may be wrong to assume that the influence of Islam helped distinguish the ‘udhrī experience from other forms of Arabic poetry. Furthermore, the ‘udhrī poets’ use of religious language is meant to express the extent of their devotion. Thus for Jamīl, those who die of love are martyrs, no less than those who fall in the jihad. At prayer, moreover, Majnūn, instead of orienting himself towards Mecca, faces the place where Laylā lives\textsuperscript{51}.

Several scholars emphasise the poor and sad quality of life in the desert along with a feeling of helplessness, and the strict Bedouin manners as factors in the emergence of al-ghazal al-‘udhrī\textsuperscript{52}. Both Yūsuf al- Yūsuf and ‘Alī al- Baṭal use a stratified social explanation to account for the ‘udhrī phenomenon. Al-Yūsuf’s analysis combines the social and psychological readings of the ‘udhrī phenomenon. On the other hand, al- Baṭal views the ‘udhrī stories as legends and analyses them symbolically. Al- Yūsuf’s interpretation considers the political subjugation practiced by the Umayyads and the social oppression that resulted from the increasing dominance of particular social values as the basis for his interpretation of the ‘udhrī

\textsuperscript{50} For a detailed discussion on this matter see ‘Abd al-Qādir al-Qitt, Fī al-shī‘r al-Islāmī wa al-Umawī (Beirut, Dar al-nahdah al-‘Arabyyiah, 1987), p. 79.
\textsuperscript{52} Al-Qitt, for instance, argues that religious chastity cannot stand as the only factor to explain the emergence of the ‘udhrī phenomenon. He takes into consideration social and political factors ‘Abd al-Qādir al-Qitt, p. 109. See also his argument on p.130. For similar ideas see also Yusuf Khulayf, al-Ḥubb al-mithāli ‘ind al-‘Arab (Cairo: Dar quba’, 1997), p. 7.
The experience of intense oppression leads to a loss of identity which is compensated for through the writing of poetry\textsuperscript{53}. Al-\ Batâl expresses a similar idea; arguing that the ‘\textit{udhrî} phenomenon, which circulated in the Hijaz desert, reflects the experiences of desert dwellers in the particular period of history of that State during the time the poems were written. It also expresses the Bedouins’ views on the political injustice of their leaders. Since freedom of expression was restricted, they referred to this injustice allegorically\textsuperscript{54}.

However, the anecdotes told about ‘\textit{udhrî} poets and even their poetry indicate that they were not poor at all; the main reason that Qays was forced to divorce his beloved wife Lubnâ was to insure that the wealth of his family remained within the family. Jamîl, in addition, is depicted as a handsome man who wears expensive clothes. In one of his verses he says:

\begin{quote}
I go amongst beggars and ask her family for hospitality,  
While my own wealthy and generous relatives are within reach\textsuperscript{55} \\
\end{quote}

Furthermore, we should take many other considerations into account: the poets were not contemporaries, and they were not without their own social and political ambitions; Kuthayyir ‘Azzah, for example, although conforming to the policy of dissimulation, eulogized the Umayyads. Therefore, the explanation that the rapid development of love poetry in the Hijaz was simply because the people of this region were not involved in politics is a fallacy\textsuperscript{56}. In the Umayyad period, not only the Hijaz but the whole Arab world was interested in the theme of love. It was a major theme

\textsuperscript{54} Al-Batâl, p. 181.  
\textsuperscript{55} Jamîl, p. 73, trans. Kinany, p. 289.  
\textsuperscript{56} Jayyusi, p. 419.
in the poetry of many famous poets such as Dhū al-Rummah and Walīd b. Yazīd. To provide an explanation for the phenomenon of love poetry in the Hijaz, Jayyusi suggests that the poets in the Hijaz had more leisure time than those in the new provinces and could more happily turn their attention to that genre. In addition, the Hijaz’s loss of its former status as the centre of Arabia must have caused a reaction which might have been expressed by amatory romanticism. Also, the long-urbanized society of the Hijāz spread its style of living to all regions. Finally, Jayyusi suggests the possibility of the emergence of a poetic vogue which simply caught on, arguing that it has an element of excellence which transcends environmental and historical conditions.

1.3 The Development of the ‘Udhri Phenomenon as a Literary Tradition

As we have shown, during the early Abbasid period in the late ninth century ‘udhri poets were transformed into the heroes of romantic stories that became very popular. Majnūn, in particular, attracted the attention of writers on the theory of love, and his verses were eventually included in anthologies of poems by poet-lovers and martyrs of love. The figure of Majnūn also attracted mystics because Majnūn’s rapture was analogous to their own ecstatic state.

Hence, in the words of one scholar, ‘It is appropriate to think that the appearance of such stories as Majnūn's, though based on an existing tradition, started a fashion, a genre of love literature that proved to be enormously popular’. The ‘udhri concept of love ‘was imbued with a courtly flavour and projected back into an

57 Ibid., p. 420.
58 Ibid.
59 See p. 2 of this chapter.
60 Dols, pp. 321-322.
61 Jayyusi, p. 421.
idealised Bedouin past. As a consequence, the biographies of poets reckoned among the ‘udhrīs are embellished with legendary details’. In modern Arabic literature, Majnūn’s character has been a source of inspiration for many poets and authors including Āḥmad Shāwqī and his poetic play; Majnūn Laylā, which was first published in 1933. Except for a few scenes, al-Aghānī’s version of the story is replicated in Shāqī’s play. In 1996, the Arab poet Qāsim Ḥaddād published a collection of poetry entitled ‘Akhbār Majnūn Laylā’, in which he renders a new reading of the old legend -- it is remarkable that, in Ḥaddād’s interpretation, the lovers are explicitly described as having a physical relationship.

In Persian literature, Majnūn’s love for Laylā is treated as a kind of adoration similar to the one reserved for God, and the legend was adopted by sufis. The first adaptation of the Arabic fragments of the legend into Persian can be found in Nizāmī’s Laylī and Majnūn (composed 118/584). Dols notes that Nizāmī’s adaptation has the advantage of being consistent with the earlier accounts as well as being a fuller and more detailed narrative. Indeed, Nizāmī’s style is characterised by an intense use of imagery. In addition, the symbolic potential in the Arabic version of Majnūn’s story reaches its zenith with the Persian sufi poet Jāmī (d.1492/898). Jāmī’s Laylī and Majnūn is a representation of the sufi quest with a creative use of convention that is remarkable. Inspired by Nizāmī, the Majnūn legend has remained very popular with Turkish poets until modern times. The most famous

---

63 In an interview, the poet declares: ‘When I wrote Majnūn’s anecdotes I wrote my own anecdotes. The old story does not matter to me as the legend is much more beautiful than the history. Majnūn is me, is “us” now. I read Majnūn within my contemporary views’. http://www.alwaqt.com/art.php aid=108245, 11 July 2008.
64 Dols, p. 331.
65 See Khairallah’s discussion of Jāmī’s work on pp. 97-133.
adaptation of the story was by Fuzuli in 942/1535-6. Farther East, the romance was embraced in Urdu literature. In the West, the Banū ῶldrah, who die of love, appeared in European literature with Stendhal’s treatise *De l’amour* (1822), also inspiring Romantics such as Heine with his poem *Der Asra* that was set to music by Carl Lowe.

### 1.4 The Authenticity of the ‘Udhri Tradition

The authenticity of the ‘udhrī tradition has always been considered suspect by certain scholars and has been the subject of much debate concerning the authenticity of the poetry and stories. These scholars start with the influential classical source *al-Aghānī*, casting doubts not just on the poetry ascribed to Majnūn, but also on his actual existence. Al-İsfahānī (d.967/356), who devoted around sixty pages of *al-Aghānī* to Majnūn Laylá, discusses the contradictory anecdotes that either confirm Majnūn’s existence and poetry or indicate that he is an imaginary persona. According to *al-Aghānī*, some reciters (*rawāh*) claimed that when they had asked members of Majnūn’s tribe Banū ῶ ‘Āmir about him, they denied that he had ever existed, some of them saying: ‘Absolutely not, Banū ῶ ‘Āmir are much more serious [than Majnun]!’

Al-İsfahānī also quotes al-Jāḥiṣ saying: ‘People claim that every anonymous poem about Laylā should be attributed to Majnūn’. However, many others confirmed that they had met Majnūn and heard the poems being recited from his own tongue.

---

66 Dols, p. 324.
67 Ibid.
70 Ibid., vol. 2, p. 333.
71 Ibid.
The debate about the authenticity of ‘udhri poetry in general (and Majnūn’s existence and the authorship of his poetry in particular), continues among modern scholars. I have no intention of reviewing all their points of view. Instead, I would like to briefly mention the major contributions relevant to the subject under discussion.

Ṭaha Ḫusayn in Ḥadīth al- ‘arbi‘a casts doubts on Majnūn’s poetry and his existence, which in conclusion, he denies completely. On the other hand, the Russian scholar Kratchkovsky has argued for the real historical existence of Majnūn by relying on historical methodology. However, Ghunaymī Hilāl in his book Al-Ḥayāh al-‘āṣīyyah bayn al-‘udhriyyah wa l-ṣuḥīyyah examines the different opinions, and surmises that if we postulate that some of Majnūn’s fragments are fake, that does not mean that he did not exist at all. Ṭ.ʿAbd Al-Qādir al-Qiṭṭ, likewise, has traced various examples of the same verses sometimes ascribed to Majnūn, and at other times ascribed to Tawbah, Naṣīb or Qays. However, as al-Jawārī has observed, seeking credibility in ‘udhri stories is a difficult task, due to the fact that they were mainly circulated orally. Moreover, the comic and adventurous nature of these anecdotes made them more likely to be embellished with imaginary details. However, al-Jawārī also demonstrates that modern scholars who have criticised this literary phenomenon may have failed to view it within its own historical context. They have criticised the ‘udhri tradition according to

---

72 Ṭaha Ḫusayn, Ḥadīth al-arbi‘a, p.190.
73 Al-Batāl, p. 2.
75 Al-Qiṭṭ, p.109.
contemporary norms where such anecdotes would hardly be made. Hamori also alludes to the oral tradition, arguing that:

It has been suggested that ‘udhri poetry is the product not of Bedouin Arabia, but of Empire sophistication; that it is the romantic creation of the early ‘Abbasid age, projected backwards in history at a time when biographies of Bedouin poets-lovers were a popular form of entertainment literature in Baghdad. But already the earliest ‘Abbasid poets knew of these ‘udhri poets, and it is hardly likely that their romance-biographies (for which the kitab al-Aghani is now our principle source) did not from the first contain a core of poetry.

In any case, these kinds of discussions are numerous and protracted. I would like to make it clear from the outset that the issue of authenticity of any particular ‘udhri anecdote or verse is not something that I will be concerned with in this study. How much of these stories and poetry is genuine and how much is the work of reciters, is largely irrelevant here. The phenomenon is generally authentic in its being a product of a particular time and place, and it does not matter if some ‘udhri verses are wrongly attributed or fabricated, or if some poets’ stories are exaggerated. In fact, some degree of fabrication is inevitable when such romances grow into legends. As Khairallah has noted:

Should a legend be realistic? Or is it rather the task of the critic to attempt an interpretation of a literary work that fascinated people’s imagination? Is it sufficient to dismiss the love story of Majnun, because when compared with the love stories of Jamil and Kuthayyir, it appears to Husain to be “the most insane and exaggerated among them, and the least meaningful”? Thus, by insisting on the necessity of realism, Husain denies the legend the benefit of the doubt, thereby missing the symbolism it may contain.

Thus, I would agree with the scholars who focus on the questions of composition and structure, rather than the question of authenticity. Moreover, as has been stated in the text quoted earlier, the ‘udhri romances incline towards legend, hence it is quite

78 Khairallah, p. 93.
natural for exaggeration to take place. *Kitāb al-āghānī* is the main source of such romances and I would agree with Suzanne Stetkevych that the poems and the anecdotes in this book have generally been either misused - that is, taken to be factual history in the modern sense - or else discarded because of their questionable historicity or obvious folkloric nature. But however unreliable they may be as a basis for factual literary biography, they nevertheless offer a rich vein of largely un-mined mythic/folkloric gold. For however far back the association of the *akhbār* with the poetry goes and whatever its nature, this association, I would argue, is not arbitrary but semantic. That is, the anecdotes somehow reflect, reinforce, or compliment the meaning of the poems or the archetypal image of the poet. Furthermore, the explication of the structure and the symbolism of the many variant stories and anecdotes juxtaposed in the *kitāb al-āghānī* narrative reveals that even apparently divergent or contradictory versions often yield what might be called the same mythic message.\(^{79}\)

Moreover, al-Iṣfāḥānī in *al-Aghānī* presents many different and inharmonious anecdotes, giving the responsibility to (*al-rawāḥ*) the storytellers themselves. Contemporary scholars may then decide, according to their own criteria, which of these anecdotes are valid, and which are not. Therefore, one *udhrī* story may appear in one scholar’s opinion as an authentic story that fits with Jamīl’s character, while other scholars declare it to be a ridiculous fake. For example, the story that Ibn Qutaybah cites of Jamīl and Kuthayyir’s meeting, which resulted in the sending of Kuthayyir as a messenger to Buthaynah to make an appointment for Jamīl,\(^ {80}\), is described by Ḥatūm as ‘the most honest story ever told about Jamīl and his love for Buthaynah’\(^ {81}\). Hence, he concludes from this story that their love is chaste and virtuous. On the other hand, Ṭaha Ḥusayn mentions the same story so as to refer to the silliness of the anecdotes told about Jamīl. He even goes beyond that and ends up

---


saying: ‘This story is among the jokes that people used to mock the Bedouins with’.\(^\text{82}\) This kind of contradiction supports my point of view regarding the matter of authenticity in *al-ghazal al-’udhri*. Questioning the authenticity of these works should not concern us much here since there is no way to prove whether every single anecdote is valid or not.

1.5 A Critical Examination of the Scholarly Field Concerning the ‘*Udhrī*’ Tradition

Over the last century, a considerable literature has been produced concerning the ‘*udhrī*’ tradition, with several attempts to analyze this tradition from a variety of perspectives. Some of the studies focus on the tradition in general while the others concentrate on one ‘*udhrī*’ poet, most often Jamīl or Majnūn. Since the heightened interest in *al-ghazal al-’udhri* from the early twentieth century, there have been very few studies on the major aspects of this literary form, namely, its origin, its characteristics and related scholarship. It should be noted first that there are no English-language books devoted entirely to the ‘*udhrī*’ tradition, though there are some studies of Majnūn Laylā, which will be discussed later. However, many studies have been written in Arabic, which include in their titles the phrase *al-ghazal al-’udhri*, *al-Ḥubb al-’udhri* or *al-Shī’r al-’udhri*. Nevertheless, few of these studies add anything new to the current level of knowledge. There are an even larger number of books that simply reproduce what is already common knowledge by expansion, stereotyping or going into verbose detail. Many of these works are based on a historical narrative approach, devoting much attention to relating stories about ‘*udhrī*’

\(^{82}\) Ḥusayn, p. 201.
poets and including examples of their poetry without making any real effort to analyze this information. Despite their increasing number, these studies make little attempt to address the subject of how the body is presented in the ‘udhri tradition, if they admit to its presence at all, and so bear little immediate relevance to my study. Therefore, in the following pages, I will focus on the themes of desire, ‘iffah ( chastity) and sexuality in the ‘udhri tradition from a scholarly perspective. It should be noted, however, that the issues addressed here are to be reiterated and discussed at greater length in the following chapters.

In the Encyclopedia of Arabic literature, Jacobi considers chastity among the main elements of ‘udhri love, a notion which, as mentioned earlier, I intend to subject to question. Jacobi sees ‘udhri love as an ‘elegiac counterpart to the frivolous eroticism of the Hijâzī ghazal, represented by ‘Umar b. Abī Rabī’ah. Gibb, likewise, in his early study, Arabic Literature: An Introduction, views al-ghazal al-

---


The structure of these works comprises the following:
A) A general introduction to ‘udhri love.
B) Stories about ‘udhri poets with special reference to their descent and character.
C) Inclusion of extracts from their poetry, usually without any commentary.

In the prelude of these books, the authors discuss love in general: its roots in Arabic literature or, sometimes, world literature, and its characteristics. This is a very generalised and repetitive approach.

'udhrī as distinct from ‘Umar and the other Makkan poets. He observes that ‘from the moment of its creation, it achieved a great and growing popularity’.85

Hamori, in a chapter on love poetry in the Abbasid period in Abbasid Belles-Lettres, notes—as several scholars do86—that in the Umayyad period, the love-poem became independent and the ghazal emerged as a distinct genre. He states that whether the Ḥiṣārī love-poems are chaste or licentious has less to do perhaps with the poet’s experience than with audience’s expectations87. However, his chapter shows very little interest in the ‘udhrī tradition.

In Ḥadīth al-arbi‘a’, first published 1924, Taha Ḥusayn distinguishes between urban erotic poetry in the Hijaz and chaste Bedouin love poetry in the desert. He also notes the exaggeration found in the ‘udhrī stories and ridicules the extreme behavior of the lovers88. Clearly, Ḥusayn judges the phenomenon aside from its legendary dimension and overlooks the aesthetics of its literary side. Making the same distinction between erotic and chaste ghazal in Hijaz during the Umayyad period, Ihṣān al-Naṣṣ, in his study, al-Ghazal fi ‘asr bani‘ Umayyah [The Ghazal in the Era of the Umayyad Dynasty], published 1976, suggests that the difference between the closed society of the Bedouin and the open society of the cities resulted in two types of ghazal: ‘udhrī and sensual. Therefore, the ‘udhrī poet’s chastity is not the result of his inability to fulfill his heart’s desire, but a genuine chastity firmly rooted in the Bedouin’s strict code of behaviour89. However, one should bear in mind

87 Ibid, p. 205.
88 Taha Ḥusayn, Ḥadīth al-arbi‘a’, p. 190.
that al-Jāhīz has another view of the issue, for he points out that men and women in Arabia would see and talk to one another freely\textsuperscript{90}.

Dealing with the themes of physicality and sexuality (or its absence) in al-
ghazal al-‘udhrī, we shall focus on two main studies, for they seem to have had a decisive impact on the others: Musā Sulaymān: al-Ḥubb al-‘udhrī [‘udhrī Love], first published in 1947; and Aḥmad al-Jawārī: al-Ḥubb al-‘udhrī nāsh’atuhu wa tatāwwurhu [‘udhrī Love: Its Origin and Progression] first published in 1948. First, it should be observed that both studies are entitled al-Ḥubb al-‘udhrī, not al-Ghazal al-‘udhrī or al-Shīr al-‘udhrī. Does it mean, therefore, that the early studies regarded ‘udhrī love as a separate phenomenon? For they give less attention to ‘udhrī poetry and more to the essence of love itself. It is clear that this concern led both scholars to define “love” in general and ‘udhrī love in particular. However, Sulaymān and Al-Jawārī differ over the matter that is paramount in this thesis: the physical presence in ‘udhrī love. Al-Jawārī defines ‘udhrī love as an elevated aspect of love, which rises above sensual desire and physical lust\textsuperscript{91}. Sulaymān, on the other hand, casts doubt on the "purified" nature of ‘udhrī love. It is interesting to note that both of these early studies – concerning the presence or absence of the physical element in ‘udhrī love – have had a strong influence on later studies. Many scholars on both sides of the argument have copied their ideas, even quoting their exact words\textsuperscript{92}. However, it is difficult to give wholehearted support to al-Jawārī’s argument in

\textsuperscript{90} For further details, see al-Jāhīz, Kitāb al-Qiyān (Rasa’il al-Jāhīz), vol.2, ed. ‘Abd al-Salām Harūn (Cairo: Matāba’at al-Khanji, 1965), p. 149.
\textsuperscript{91} Al-Jawārī, p. 51.
\textsuperscript{92} It is interesting to see that in his article about ‘udhrī love, al-Ladhiqī quotes the exact words of Sulayman and al-‘Azām without any acknowledgement of their source: al-Ladhiqī, al-Sharq al-Awsat, 19 September 2003.
favour of the sublimation of ‘udhri’ love\textsuperscript{93}, since the ideas that he presents on the subject are extremely confused.

Sulayma\textup{n}’s allusions to physicality in ‘udhri’ love can be considered as very early hints of a discussion of this topic in the corpus of al-ghazal al- ‘udhri’. According to Sulayma\textup{n}, ‘‘udhri poets were not angels….The sorrow resulting from the lack of sexual relations with their beloveds and their sensual beauty is not entirely absent from ‘udhri’ poetry\textsuperscript{94}. In his view, what we should understand about ‘udhri poets is their struggle for love and their making every effort for its sake, rather than their rising above or disapproval of physical desires. He argues that there are many verses describing the beloved’s body and the poet’s lust for it. Although Sulayma\textup{n}’s contribution is useful as an early source raising the question of the body in ‘udhri’ love, he gives readers only a few hints without providing any serious analysis of this issue, especially as it concerns ‘udhri’ poetry.

Does literary creativity spring from desire? Şadiq Jalal al-‘Azm’s book \textit{Fī al-ḥubb wa al-ḥubb al-‘udhari} (1968), contains an important discussion of this idea. He puts forward many genuine and daring perspectives, maintaining that ‘udhri’ love is in fact a sensual love, of which physical attraction is a part\textsuperscript{95}. However, he argues, no physical contact actually takes place because the lover chooses to keep both his love and poetic inspiration alive by creating more obstacles between him and the object of his desire. Yet, al-‘Azm’s discussion is limited to the prose material and does not address the poetry accompanying these prose fragments. He is not concerned with the interpretation of ‘udhri’ verses, which could be considered as

\textsuperscript{93} Al-Jawāri’s argument appears in several places in his book, for instance, see pp.13, 64 and 74.
\textsuperscript{94} Sulayman, p.101.
\textsuperscript{95} Al-‘Azm, Şadiq Jalal. \textit{Fī al-ḥubb wa al-ḥubb al-‘udhari} (Beirut: Manshurāt Nizar Qabbānī,1968), p. 81.
essential for understanding the ‘udhri’ tradition. Moreover, his view of the ‘udhri’ poets as being masochistic, is open to criticism.

On the other hand, both Muṣṭafā al-Shak‘ah in Rihlat al-shi‘r min al-umawiyyah ila‘ Abbasiyyah [Poetry from the Umayyad Era to the Abbasid Era] and ‘Afīf Ḥaṭūm in al-Ghazal fī ‘asr al-umawi‘ [Ghazal in the Umayyad Period] proclaim that Jamīl celebrates the chaste love which spread across the Bedouin desert after promiscuity was forbidden by Islam. They argue that no one can question the chastity and virtue of Jamīl, Majnūn and the other ‘udhri’ poets. Ḥaṭūm tends to generalise and make judgmental comments though, rather than presenting a critical analysis. However, when Ḥaṭūm addresses the question of “physical innuendo in Jamīl’s poetry”, he explains that this type of verse is merely an effort to imitate the other famous poets like ‘Umar b. Abī Rabī‘ah. Therefore, he emphasises that we should not doubt Jamīl’s chastity and pure saintly love for Buthaynah merely from a reading of these incidental verses. Yusuf Bakkār, likewise, observes that although ‘udhri’ poetry includes many physical innuendos, he stresses that we should not question al-ghazal al-‘udhri‘ and the implied chastity of its poets. It is clear, however, that Jamīl and the other ‘udhri’ poets indicate more than these scholars wish to see.

---

97 For instance, he describes Jamīl as ‘the leader of romantic poets, not just in his era, but in every era until our modern times. He describes Jamīl’s verse:

Conversation in their company
Brings joy,
But each man who dies in their midst
Is a martyr

as the most romantic stanza by an Arab poet, Ḥaṭūm, p. 165.
98 Ibid., p. 161; see also some similar ideas on pp. 166 & 196.
The subject of 'iffah (chastity) is also approached by al-Ṭahir Labīb Jadīdī in his study *Susyūlujiyya al-ghazal al-‘Arabi: al-shi‘r al-‘udhri namudhajan*\(^{100}\). He presents a new view of 'udhri poetry by relying on structuralist theories in discussing topics such as the relationship between the Arabic language and sexual life, Islamic monotheism, and the adoration of a single beloved in 'udhri poetry. The contributors discussed above have emphasised the social and political factors in the 'udhri phenomenon, whereas Labīb brings to light economic factors as well, drawing on Marxist theory. He attempts to engage the question of the chastity of these poets: Is it an aspect of poetic imagination or does it reflect reality? In Labīb’s opinion, the attitude of the 'udhri poets towards sexual life differs sharply from that of Islamic tradition.

Nevertheless, in my view, the signs of physical presence in 'udhri poetry and anecdotes should not be ignored. Idealising the beloved does not mean that desire is absent. On the contrary, it is always there, depicted by the 'udhri poets in several ways. Is it worth distinguishing between the presence of the desire and the impossibility of satisfying it? Moreover, as Labīb himself notes, there are many erotic descriptions of the beloved’s body within 'udhri poetry.

The subject of 'udhri love is also briefly addressed by J.C. Bürgel in his article “Love, Lust, and Longing: Eroticism in Early Islam as Reflected in Literary Sources”. He classifies 'udhri love as one of the major types of erotic love. Although

he sees Jamīl as active and cunning in terms of sensuality, he then says that he intends not to question the value of ‘udhrīte love.

Are ‘udhrī love stories ultimately about literary creativity? Al-‘Aqqād studies Jamīl from the psychological angle by examining the narratives about the poet, and trying to examine the balance between his love and his literary creativity. He concludes that Jamīl and the other ‘udhrī poets are the natural product of their era. That era itself is analysed in several chapters. Al-‘Aqqād tackles the inconsistency between the ‘udhrī ideal of immortality and chastity on the one hand, and the ‘udhrī verses mentioning physical contact, on the other. Here, the author sees a link between what people wish to be and what they are in reality as human beings.

Likewise, in Love, Madness and Poetry: An Interpretation of the Majnūn Legend, As‘ad E. Khairallah suggests that Majnūn is torn between writing poetry and keeping his love secret, and therefore, by breaking the covenant of secrecy, Majnūn has lost his blessed union with Laylā. Khairallah emphasises the three dimensions of Majnūn’s character: love, madness and poetry. He is concerned with the link between the legend of Majnūn and its mystical dimension, highlighting the significance of insanity as both a stigma and, in contrast, a sign of rebellion. This purity of vision and the courage to express it make the madman almost a poetic ideal. Khairallah discusses this significant question: Are love and madness prerequisites for poetry? He concludes that Majnūn seeks to satisfy his passion in a dream world – through poetry and insanity. Nevertheless, the author offers no explanation of the distinction between the omnipresence of Laylā in nature and in the mind of Majnūn,

---

and her physical presence in his poetry. He just mentions in passing that his insanity is another necessary means of communication with his beloved. Hence, the erotic dimensions are absent from Khairallah’s study and one might question his mystical interpretations of the manifestations of insanity. However, what is particularly interesting in his analysis of Majnūn’s insanity is his hint of the physical condition of Majnūn, which becomes his distinguishing mark as the incarnation of the lovesick poet, in contrast with other heroes from this type of romance. A similar idea is expounded well in Michael Dols’ book Majnūn: The Madman in the Medieval Islamic World, which is a thorough examination of the subject of insanity in Medieval Islamic society. This study is useful particularly for its interest in the physical description of Majnūn’s madness and the causes of love.

Andre Miquel’s comparison of Majnūn and Tristan is concerned with the themes of society’s norms, the tragic ends of the lovers and eternal love. The comparison between tragedy in Arabic love stories and Western literature is also the main concern of Manzalaouini’s articles entitled: “Tragic Ends of Lovers: Medieval Islam and the Latin West” and “Swooning Lovers: a Theme in Arab and European Romance”. In spite of his important comments on the role of tragedy in love stories, the role of sexuality within the tragedy in these stories is not discussed.

Ruqayya Yasmine Khan’s Sexuality and Secrecy in the Medieval Arabic Romance of Majnūn Layla is another valuable contribution to the subject of Majnūn’s romance. Khan argues that Majnūn’s romance is scarcely chaste and that it is about the competing models of courtship and marriage. She also maintains that a

---

103 Dols considers the early Arabic version of Majnūn’s romance as well as Nizami’s version.
105 Ruqayya Yasmine Khan, Sexuality and Secrecy in the Medieval Arabic Romance of Majnūn Layla (a dissertation in the department of Asian and Middle Eastern studies, The University of Pennsylvania, 1997).
crucial component of the romance is the semiotics of secrecy. So, it is the inability of
desire to remain hidden and its proclivity to express itself in and through language
that cause the tragedy. Therefore, there is a conflict between individual expression
and social mandates. Khan also addresses the question of Islamic influence on this
romance, yet, unlike other scholars, she emphasises the social conflict between the
old Bedouin order and the new Islamic order. She sees Majnūn as an Anti-Type of
the Prophet and the Bedouin Wild Man as the embodiment of the Bedouin social
order that opposes the Islamic one. In her analysis of “secrecy” in this romance,
Khan concentrates on the fact that the revelation of desire is followed by the
concealment of the desired object. Furthermore, by mentioning that the beloved is
the subject of gossip, the poet belies the image of the chaste maiden. The language
itself engenders his desire. However, one should question Khan’s view of Laylā in
particular. Is Laylā really victimised by both her love and society, and, moreover,
does Majnūn really make her a public disgrace? Despite the extensive range of this
study, it focuses only on Majnūn, whereas I intend to study the entire ‘udhrī
tradition, concentrating especially on its elements of physical presence.

Bouhdiba’s work _Sexuality in Islam_ offers a significant contribution to the
subject of sexuality in Medieval Islamic communities. Bouhdiba asserts that in the
practice of love, the Qur’an prescribes a balanced approach, but argues that this has
not been translated into social practice. What was unified in revelation fell apart at
the historical level. Themes like sexual practice and prohibitions in Islam, the
frontier of the sexes, the sexual and the sacral are discussed in detail in his study.

Paul, 1985).
107 It was first published in French in 1975, and then translated by Alan Sheridan and published in
English in London in 1985. The Arabic translation by Hala al-Ouri appeared first in Cairo in 1986 and
then in Beirut in 2001.
Bouhdiba also addresses the subject of variations on eroticism: misogyny, mysticism and *muju*ūn, maintaining that they are three ways of dealing with the single problem; misogyny encloses Muslims in their own empire, *muju*ūn releases their inhibitions, and mysticism sublimes them\(^\text{108}\). The sensuality of Paradise is also discussed in his chapter “The Infinite Orgasm”, where Bouhdiba argues that the sensual nature of paradisiacal pleasures in the Qur’an indicates the wholesomeness of physical desire. The author quotes from Islamic texts that describe infinite pleasure with houris\(^\text{109}\).

Joseph Massad, in his study *Desiring Arabs*, examines the linking of the concepts of sex and civilization in the modern Arab world. He sees the concept of homosexuality as a product of the colonial experience. His book traces the history of the unfolding of the concepts of culture and civilization in the contemporary Arab world. It is an intellectual history of the representation of sexual desire in and about the Arab world. He argues that it was within the context of ‘ethnopornography’ that Arab readers began to read orientalist accounts which emphasised Arab sexual life, often in a moralising manner. Influenced by this reading, they were overcome by a sense of crisis\(^\text{110}\). *Al-ghazal al-‘udhri* is one of the elements that have been subjected to this manner of reconsideration by scholars in the Arab world – under the influence of colonial discourses on sexuality, Massad would argue.

My thesis will partially make use of certain Western theories about the body and sexuality. For example, Freud’s oft-cited article “Creative Writers and Day

\(^{108}\) Bouhdiba, p. 117.

\(^{109}\) The subject of sensuality in Paradise has been addressed frequently by scholars. Many of them rely heavily on Bouhdiba’s analysis. For example, in his essay “Sexuality, Diversity and Ethics in the Agenda of Progressive Muslims”, Scott A. Kugle explains the depiction of Paradise in the Qur’an: ‘It is not just bodily, but sensually delightful and even sexually blissful’. Scott A. Kugle, *Sexuality, Diversity and Ethics in the Agenda of Progressive Muslim*, http://www.geocities.com/vidyak1/scottkugledoc.pdf, 5 June 2005.

Dreaming is particularly useful in understanding the relation between the wishes of the poets and their poetry. Georges Bataille, in *Erotism: Death and Sensuality*, demonstrates that eroticism assents to life to the point of death. He asks: ‘what does physical eroticism signify if not a violation of the very being of its practitioners - a violation bordering on death, bordering on murder’. Bataille argues that only the beloved in this world can bring immortality to two mortal creatures. Hence, love spells suffering in so far as it is a quest for the impossible. We suffer from isolation in our individual separateness. He also demonstrates that the possession of the beloved object does not imply death, but rather that the idea of death is linked to the urge to possess. This work highlights the connection between individuality, sensuality and death, themes of some importance to my study.

A significant effort has already been made to analyse and understand the concept of love in the classical Arabic sources. In his study, *al-Ḥubb fī al-turāth al-‘Arabī*, Muhammad Ḥasan ‘Abdallah criticises the widely held view of separating Arab love into the ‘udhrī and sensual categories. He believes that the phenomenon of love is more complex, being related to rituals, feelings, ideas and sectarian distinctions, all of which are expressed in poetry. His study deals with various sources of references to love and he analyses many of the concepts.

Raja‘ Sala‘mah is concerned with the complex relationship between passionate love (‘ishq) and its expression through the written word. In her voluminous and informative book *al-‘Ishq wa’l-kitabah: qirā‘h fī al-mawrūth*, the author makes a

---

113 Ibid., p. 20.
special effort to analyse the words for love in Arabic, of which there are, interestingly, more than a hundred, although some scholars do not consider them synonymous. Sàlmàh draws a parallel between the image of the afflicted camel (al-bà‘r al-sàdim) and the fate of the lover (al-‘àshiq). The longing is a form of energy, though a problematic one, as it cannot be easily satisfied. In that respect, it resembles fire. Indeed, many of the Arabic words used for love and longing are derived from the root word for “fire”\(^\text{115}\). Although this study is not confined to the ‘udhàrī tradition, it does refer to the tradition, providing a significant contribution to the understanding of love in Arab culture and in the Arabic language. It also contains many references to the body and to death.

In her study *Theory of Profane Love among the Arabs: The Development of the Genre*, Giffen provides summaries of many classical Arabic works on love, thus identifying the reasoning behind the Arab theory of profane love. She concludes that ‘the factor which most determines the character of these books is the religious one’\(^\text{116}\). It is true that the ethical and religious attitudes of the authors influence the structure, general argument, and even the minor details of their books. Poetry is quoted in all the works on the theory of love. It ‘might seem incidental to the burden of the author’s discussion, just so much decoration or elaboration of the essential ideas’\(^\text{117}\). Anecdotes and stories also appear in these books to illustrate or exemplify the ideas discussed. The information from Arabic lexicographers and philologists alongside the opinions of philosophers and physicians are another element in these works on the theory of love. Giffen also discusses the evolution of form and content

\(^{115}\) Sàlmàh stresses this point several times in her study. See, Sàlmàh, pp. 53, 80.
\(^{117}\) *Ibid*, p. 58.
in these works, concluding that they reveal certain common features, examining terms such as 'ishq and mahabhah and their use. The concept of the martyrs of love is also analysed here, the author tracing its development alongside the concept of martyrdom in Islam.

1.6 The Structure and Trajectory of the Thesis

Kitab al-aghani will be my main source for the stories told about 'udhri poets such as Majnun, Jamil and Qays. I will also refer to other classical sources such as al-Shi'r wa al-shu'ara' by Ibn Qutaybah. For the poetry, I will refer to the poets’ anthologies of poetry (divans). The main sources of my thesis are the diwans of ‘Urwah b. Ḥizam, Majnun Layla, Qays Lubna, Jamil Buthaynah and Kuthayyir ‘Azzah. All of these works and their commentaries have been published during the last century. For the Qur'anic verses, Yusuf Ali’s translation is used.

Moreover, to achieve the objectives of this thesis, it has been necessary to consult the most relevant classical literature on love, particularly for the focus on the depiction of the lover’s body and how it is affected by love. Kitab al-zahrah (The Book of the Flower) by Ibn Da‘ud (d.909/297), and Tawq al-hamamah (The Ring of the Dove) by Ibn Ḥazm (d.1063/456) are two of the most important sources for my thesis and are closely related to each other. Kitab al-zahrah, is an anthology of Arabic love poetry, but is not just a collection of poetry as it also discusses the theory of love, being the first extant Arabic work on the topic. Some of the key topics in al-

---

118 A discussion about the structure of kitab al-aghani will be provided in the second chapter.
119 Some of these titles are: Kitab al-zahrah by Abu Bakr Muḥammad b. Da‘ud al-Isfahani (d. 297/910), Kitab al-muwashsha by al-Washsha’ (d. 325/936), Tawq al-hamamah fi al-ulūf wa al-ulūf by Ibn Hazm al-Andalusi (d. 456/1064), Māṣarī‘ al-‘ushshaq by Abu Ja‘far al-Sarraj (d. 500/1106), Dhamm al-hawa by Ibn al-Jawzi (d. 597/1200), Rawdat al-mubībin wa ruḥat al-mushtaqīn by Ibn Qayyim al-Jawziyah (d.751/135) and Tazya‘ al-aswaq bi tafsīl ashtawq al-‘ushshaq by Da‘ud al-Antaki (d. 1008/1599).
zahrah are: Waṣl union with the loved one; being together, bayn, nawaṭ separation from the loved one; being apart; giving the main reason for the writing of the poem in the first place as being most often due to the pain of separation. There are other references to Hajr, Jafā' spurning or abandonment of the lover, and Kitman “Secret”/Concealment\(^{120}\).

In Ẓawq al-ḥamamah,\(^{121}\) which is widely regarded as a masterpiece, the author proceeds in a rational manner to describe the essence and nature of love, its possible causes and symptoms as well as the frustration and perils surrounding it. This book is a prose work in which the passages of poetry, some composed by the author himself, are subservient to the prose text. Ibn Ḥazm portrays the tragedies of love, including examples from his own life while keeping within the Arabic tradition of literature on love\(^{122}\).

The methodology used in this study is text analysis, using classical literary texts of ʿudhīrī narratives and poetry. The thesis consists of six chapters. Following this introduction, Chapter Two focuses on the ways in which stories and narratives about the poets and events throughout the 9th and 10th centuries gave rise to certain compositions that in effect established a tradition and reconstructed a past. The chapter will raise issues such as Al-ghazal al-ṣariḥ vs. al-ghazal al-ʿudhīrī, and moral and ethical issues and their effect in reconstructing the past, with special consideration of kitāb al-aghānī. In Chapter Three, I discuss the concepts of sexuality, marriage and

---

\(^{120}\) Devin Stewart, *Emory Resources on the Middle East*. www.mesas.emory.edu/gmesc/pdf/10_Love_Theory_Unit_All.pdf, 18 July 2008, pp. 4-5.

\(^{121}\) Ẓawq al-ḥamamah has been translated to many languages; the English version appearing in 1953, translated by Arberry. It is one of the few Arabic works which, when translated, is attractive to the Western reader.

\(^{122}\) Giffen, pp. 24-25.
chastity in Islamic discourse; this touches on Islamic jurisprudence as well as Islamic culture in general. Also, the implications of chastity as understood in the stories about 'udhri poets and theories of love will be discussed, while taking into consideration the context of the 9th and 10th centuries. The problematic relationship that exists between the ‘udhri tradition and Islamic discourse around sexuality and love will be the main focus of this chapter.

In Chapter Four, the theme of how the beloved’s body is represented, is set within the generic convention of classical Arabic poetry. Attention is drawn to the image of a corpulent woman and the depiction of a woman as a gazelle. Moreover, the chapter examines the ethereal aspect of female beauty in al-ghazal al-‘udhri. The presence and absence of the beloved's physical form is the primary subject of discussion in Chapter Five. I will argue that the bodily presence in al-ghazal al-‘udhri does not always take the form of a physical body—sometimes it appears through symbolic channels, where the symbolising of the body appears alongside its physical depiction. The themes of gestures, speech, phantoms, the beloved’s house, and her presence through nature will be examined in this chapter. This discussion leads to the central question of the subsequent chapter: does the beloved's absence enhance the poetry about her? Therefore, Chapter Six examines the friction between poetry and possession. By tracing the tropes of unfulfilled love and the idealised woman, the chapter offers an argument about the discourse of cultural value developed around poetry, the reception of the poet as a hero and the representation of poetry as the ultimate goal. In Chapter Seven, I provide a discussion of the depiction of the lover’s body in the ‘udhri tradition by analyzing the vocabulary of sickness, healing, the physician and the use of magic—all of which affect the body. They are
frequently repeated motifs and vocabularies in *al-ghazal al-‘udhri*. The themes of madness and death will also be explored in this, the final chapter. By analyzing the texts through the chapters and discussing the issues raised, it is hoped that the thesis will offer an original contribution to the subject.
Reconstructing the Past

2.1 Al-Ghazal: the Love Poem

During the Umayyad period, for the first time in the history of Arabic literature, love poems, known as "ghazal", appeared. The ghazal is a monothematic poem which is devoted entirely to the erotic theme. Before that time, amatory preludes known as nasīb had formed only the opening section of a long poem that praised a patron or tribe or perhaps the poet himself, as well as a description of the poet’s journey and of his camel or horse and so on. It is still open to discussion ‘whether the ghazal originated exclusively from the nasīb, or whether other poetic models should be taken into account’¹. In the first chapter we discussed differing opinions on the main factors behind the development of the Umayyad ghazal and the new concept of love arising from it². Jacobi notes that ‘the poets of the seventh century introduced new themes and concepts, but they also made use of conventions, sometimes subtly changing their meaning or employing them in unusual combinations’³.

In any case, when considering the ghazal, we should bear in mind that the art of singing contributed to the spread of this kind of poetry. This art was a natural result of prosperity and the availability of leisure time in Hījāz. Persians also contributed to elevating the Arab art in both singing and musicology⁴. Comparing pre-Islamic love poetry and Umayyad ghazal, Jacobi states:

When comparing love poetry of the jāhiliyya to amatory verses of the first Islamic century, I came to the conclusion that at least some elements of the latter could be derived from a common source, a

² See chapter 1, pp. 11-15.
change in aesthetic consciousness based on two interrelated factors: 1. a new experience of time, 2. a new attitude towards reality.

Even when the Umayyad love poets employed conventional motifs such as the *talal*, they invented a new ending to the story, or connected it with other themes of the poem.

2.2 The Roots of al-Ghazal al-‘Udhřī

A group of pre-Islamic poets who had adopted a similar attitude in love and *ghazal* to the subsequent ‘*udhřī* attitude were referred to as *mutaiyyamu* (passionate lovers), in classical Arabic literary sources. Examples of these are al-Muraqash al-Akbar and Asmā’, Al-Mukhabbal and Mayla’, ‘Abdullah b. Al-’Ajlān and Hind.

This approach to love can be traced back to the pre-Islamic period. Poetry, the creative social expression of the Arab tribes of the desert at that time, voiced this approach, so this expression of love existed in the desert-based nomad societies of the Arabian peninsula before the emergence of Islam. The existence of the pre-Islamic lovers is validated by the ‘*udhřī* poets themselves: Qays b. Dhariyyih quotes ‘Amr b. ‘Ajlān who was killed by his love for Hind and Jamīl also quotes him, together with al-Muraqqash, as martyrs of love. However, the amount of poetry that has reached us from the pre-Islamic lovers (*mutayyamu*) is scarce in comparison with the ‘*udhřī* poetry we have in hand from the Umayyad period. Hence, although ‘*udhřī* love—as represented in texts—has some roots in the pre-Islamic era, it did not

---

7 Yusuf Khulayf, p. 57.
8 Qays, p. 122.
9 Jamīl, p. 32.
become the marker of a literary genre in its own right until the Umayyad period. Jacobi notes, ‘Whereas the pre-Islamic love poetry only knows the hero and heroine as profoundly bound to the collective needs, the new love code of the Umayyad period shows lovers who are individuals, even with an unconventional language’ 10.

2.3 Al-ghazal al-ṣarīḥ vs. al-ghazal al-‘udhrī

Many scholars, such as Ṭaha Ḥusayn and Ghunaymī Hilāl, consider ‘udhrī poetry to be the opposite of the sensual love poetry known as al-ghazal al-ṣarīḥ and which not only had a place in early Arabic literature but flourished until recent times. Therefore, love poetry in classical Arab literature, especially during the Umayyad period, has been seen by scholars generally as divided into two main groups: chaste Bedouin (‘udhrī) and sensual urban (ṣarīḥ) poetry. ‘Udhri poets, such as ‘Urwah, Jamīl and Majnūn, are considered the most illustrious poets of the chaste Bedouin genre, and poets from Madīnah and Mecca, such as ‘Umar b. Abī Rabī‘ah and al-‘Urjī, are considered the best in the profane urban genre 11. Hilāl explains that when Ḥijāz lost its political prestige, it suffered from a state of isolation, and its poets started to entertain themselves and lead a dissolute life. The best examples are ‘Umar b. Abī Rabī‘ah and those living in cities where facilities and luxuries were available as a result of the Islamic conquests. However, rural poets took their pure love in other directions because they were neither involved in politics nor yearning for a luxurious life. According to Hilāl, this dissimilarity can be attributed to the fact that they lived in areas remote from cities and were steeped in Arab traditions and were, therefore,

---

11 Hilāl, p. 23.
able to preserve Islamic ethics. Yet, as we saw in the first chapter, Hilāl’s assumption has been challenged and one can argue that some city dwellers surely were as “steeped” in Arab traditions.

In any case, according to ‘Umar’s ghazal, love experience had become a profane adventure. The lover is presented as the pursuer of women as part of his amorous adventures during the Ḥajj season. ‘Umar’s ghazal description of the beauty of women focuses on the sensual side of it and one single poem might refer to the names of several women. Also, ‘Umar b. Abī Rabi’ah is famous for the ghazal that portrays the poet, not only as a lover, but also as the one being loved and chased by women. His poetry is constructed around dramatic dialogue. His language is simple, tuned with a rhythm adaptable to songs. In addition, ‘Umar b. Abī Rabi’ah celebrates his amorous adventures with self-assured and independent women from respectable families. Some of these adventures, as ‘Umar’s poems show, were initiated by women themselves. Al-‘Isfahānī reports that:

Hind, the daughter of al-Ḥarīth of the Murrah tribe, invited ‘Umar b. Abī Rabi’ah to her house one day so that she and her companions could talk to him, saying: ‘Oh, oh, ‘Umar, listen to this. If only you could have seen me a few days ago when I was with my family! I put my head under my gown and looked at my nakedness and was very desirable. At this I called out: “‘Umar, ‘Umar” and ‘Umar replied: ‘I would have called out: ‘At your service, at your service’.

As this anecdote, and many others of its type show, the kind of love relation that ‘Umar’s ghazal presented is a sensual, adventurous love. The beloved in his poetry is portrayed as strong and beautiful, an independent and pleasure-seeking woman. She is also portrayed as the potential companion of a man.

12 Ibid.
14 See examples of this in his diwan, pp. 150, 371.
15 See examples of this in his diwan, pp. 154, 161,163, 168.
On the other hand, the vow to remain faithful is a leitmotiv of *al-ghazal al-
′udhri*, as often evidenced in the *diwan* of Jamīl. Many of his verses may be
understood as allusions to the poet’s total obsession with his beloved. Indeed, a core
theme of the ‘′udhri′ tradition presents the lover as being totally preoccupied with the
beloved, devoting himself to her, and refraining from making love with any other
woman.\footnote{Ibn Hazm harshly criticizes the idea of having several lovers: ‘Herein lies the root of the error
which misleads a man into asserting that he loves two persons, or is passionately enamoured of two
entirely different individuals. All this is to be explained as springing out of carnal desire, as we have
just described; it is called love only metaphorically, and not in the true meaning of the term. As for the
true lover, the yearning of his soul is so excessive as to divert him from all his religious and mundane
occupations; how then could he have room to busy himself with a second love-affair?’ Ibn Hazm
al-Andalusi, *Tawq al-hamamah fi al-ulfa′ wa al-ulūf*, ed. Ihsan Ābbas (Beirut: al-Mu′asasah al-
′arabiyyah li al-dirasat wa al-nashr, 1993), p.58.} When Jamīl found himself presented with seven girls from respectable
families, each of them wishing to marry him, he wrote the following poem about
Buthaynah:

```
Many is the woman who comes to me  
And offers herself in all earnest mixed with jestful words
I answer her with kindness after hesitating,
My love for Buthaynah, prevents me accepting you.
If I had in my heart a fingernail of extra love to give
I would accept you or I would send you my letters
```

\footnote{Jamīl, p. 87.}

Jamīl, in these verses, is expressing a love that occupied his heart so fully that there
is not ‘a fingernail of extra love to give’ to any woman apart from Buthaynah. Even
if other women promised to fulfill his desire, he still could not think of anyone but
his beloved, despite the implication that she does not ‘offer herself’\footnote{In *al-Shi′r wa al-Shu′ra′*, Ibn Qutaybah provides a similar anecdote about Kuthayyir ‘Azzah.
′A′ishah b. Talhah invited him to compose poetry about her, instead of ‘Azzah, claiming that she was
richer and more beautiful. But Kuthayyir replied in verses that showed his devotion to ‘Azzah. Ibn
Qutaybah, pp. 508-509.}. There is a
narrative in *al-Aghāni* in which Jamīl’s father tries to dissuade Jamīl from pursuing
Buthaynah after her marriage, and in so doing he unequivocally states: ‘Women are
replaceable’. Jamīl counters this with the reply that, for him, Buthaynah is not: ‘By
God, were I able to efface her memory from my heart and to erase her person from my mind’s eye, I would have done so but it is impossible (...) indeed this is a trial and affliction.20

From Jamīl’s perspective, love transcends mundane life and reaches up to the eternal. It is a symbol of the absolute. Love, to him, is the whole of ‘being’. Imru’ al-Qays and ‘Umar b. Abī Rabī‘ah on the other hand, do not love specific women but love instead any woman who provides enjoyment. As for Jamīl’s love, it is purely personal. He is not interested in an instrument or means, but rather in a single being who is incomparable to any other. This person cannot be substituted by another. Women, from this perspective, seem to be exemplary symbols of desire. The lover finds his ultimate happiness in dreaming about this matchless character and attaining this desire. Thus, he becomes devoted to one woman regardless of whether she marries him or another.21

Labīb argues that there is a parallel between the concept of monotheism and the unique beloved in the ‘udhri tradition. Islam refuted polytheism by stressing the need to submit to one God alone. Consequently, the concept of monotheism is mirrored in the uniqueness of the beloved from the beginning of the ‘udhri tradition. In Labīb’s opinion, the theme of ‘udhri poetry is often centred on a woman for whose sake one wishes to die. Moreover, contemplating her love can have a curative effect. Jamīl says: ‘remembrance of you cures my numb leg’.22 Sympathizing with the lover and supplication to her make the beloved (the woman) an ideal, while the lover (the man), is a human being.23

22 Jamīl, p. 89.
23 Labīb, pp. 90-91.
Moreover, the desire is the object itself for 'udhri lovers. That desire is their only aim even if it ultimately leads to madness and death. That is why Majnūn casts himself as the eternally suffering lover:

She said: you have lost your mind over me
I said to her:
Love is greater than what [afflicts] the madmen
One entrusted with love, the possessor [ṣāhib] of love,
Does not recover from it for eternity,
Whereas the madman is only felled by it for a time\textsuperscript{24}

In these verses, Majnūn ‘nobly privileges his passion for his beloved above all else’\textsuperscript{25}. He states that there is no way for the ‘possessor of love’ to recover from it. Yet, ‘true love, in contrast to a crazed infatuation, is romanticized as an affliction from which recovery is not only impossible but undesirable’\textsuperscript{26}.

The motif of the poet's total preoccupation with the beloved was developed and continuously elaborated upon by Umayyad and later Abbasid poets. 'Abbas b. al-Aihnaf (d. 188/804), for example, devoted a poem to it, describing the loss of all his perceptive faculties. Not even his tongue obeys him any more, but insists on pronouncing the beloved's name. Thus reality has lost its power at last, and the lover's mind is entirely dominated by the imagination\textsuperscript{27}.

However, in spite of this distinction between 'udhri and ṣariḥ "sensual" ghazal, no trace of such a clear division can be found in early texts dealing with the ghazal in the Umayyad period. Al-shi'r wa al-shu'ara' by Ibn Qutaybah (d. 276/899), for instance, is one of the oldest sources to address the 'udhri poets and poetry. Ibn Qutaybah did not categorize these poets as one school nor did he place them in the

\textsuperscript{24} Majnūn, p. 217, trans. Khan, p. 117.
\textsuperscript{25} Khan, p. 118.
\textsuperscript{26} Ibid.
\textsuperscript{27} Jacobi, “Time and Reality in "Naṣīb" and "Ghazal", p. 9.
"opposing" genre of "sensual love" urban poets. Instead, he just described each of the ‘udhrī poets as ‘one of the famous Arab lovers (‘ushshaq)’\textsuperscript{28}. Certain modern scholars have also criticised this division, including Salamah who notes that ‘udhrī poets share ‘Umar’s view of a woman as a potential friend of a man’\textsuperscript{29}. Some of the urban poets, moreover, such as al-Ḥarīth b. Khālid were themselves proud of being chaste\textsuperscript{30}. In addition, Bürgel notes that some ‘udhrī elements exist in the love poetry of non-‘udhrī poets such as ‘Umar b. Abī Rabī‘ah and even in that of the terrible rake Caliph Walīd b. Yazīd, who boasted of his ability to emulate the ‘udhrī style\textsuperscript{31}.

Therefore, the link between the Bedouin encampment with its chastity, on one hand, and urban areas full of sensuality, on the other, is derived from the emergence of a superficial nostalgia for an imaginary origin, which in this context is represented by the desert. This moral duality of chastity and the profane has been incorrectly applied by scholars in integrated texts of ghazal where neither geographic nor tribal belonging seem to be of importance\textsuperscript{32}.

Also, unfulfilled love was not limited to the Bedouin in the desert. After the time of these bards and their environment, love was vocalized in a new milieu in urban areas by poets who were fuqahā’ and religious ascetics. One example is ‘Ubaydallah b. ‘Abdullah b. ‘Utbah, who demonstrated his regret for divorcing his spouse by composing poems about her\textsuperscript{33}. His story reminds us of the story of the

\textsuperscript{28} Ibn Qutaybah used this sentence to describe Jamīl, p. 260, Qays b. Dharīh, p. 628 and ‘Urwa b. Ḥizam, p. 622.
\textsuperscript{29} Raja’ Salamah, al-‘Ishq wa al-kitābah: qira‘āt fī al-mawrūth (Colon: Manshurāt al-jamal, 2003), pp. 356-357.
\textsuperscript{30} Ibid.
\textsuperscript{31} Bürgel, p. 94.
\textsuperscript{32} Salamah, p. 358.
\textsuperscript{33} Al-Ḥaṣafāni, vl.8, p. 93.
‘udhri poet, Qays b. Dharīḥ. Among the ascetic poets in Madīnah was ‘Ubd al-Raḥmān al-Jashmī, known as al-Quss who became infatuated with the songstress, Salāmāh, after listening to her singing. Clearly, the bards and fiqāḥa were already rejoicing at love in the Abbasid era when the first compilations of the words of paramours including ‘udhrīs, and others concerned with love, first began to appear.

2.4 The Important Source: Kitāb al-Aghānī

After the flowering of al-ghazal al-’udhri in the Umayyad period and the diffusion of its spirit to fiqāḥa in Madīnah and Mecca, it cannot be traced again as a genre until the Abbasid age when ‘udhri love became the exalted ideal of courtly society in Persia, although the prevailing moral outlook of the latter context clearly differed with respect to the earlier milieu. It was at this time that moving love stories were documented about tragic lovers and when poetry and akhbar from prior periods were documented and compiled. The earliest extant version of the romance is to be found in an anthology of Ibn Qutaybah (d. 276/889), who collected the works of major Arab poets.

But, the most important source of al-ghazal al-’udhri is Kitāb al-Aghānī by Abū-Faraj al-Isfahānī (d. 356/967), the authenticity of which we discussed in the first chapter. However, we still need to know more about the author and his interests, as well as how the work was composed. We also need to look more closely at its structure, in order to understand al-Isfahānī’s contribution to al-ghazal al-udhri, which became in his period the subject of renewed interest. Abū-Faraj ‘Alī b. al-

See his story in chapter5, pp. 171-172.
Ibid., vl.8, p. 6.
See chapter1, pp. 16-17.
See chapter1, pp. 19-23.
Husayn al-İsfahānī, is an ideal scholar to focus on because of his wide range of knowledge, his aristocratic lineage and the fact that he was also a poet. He was of Arab origin, a descendant of the Quraysh tribe and a lineal descendant of Marwān, the last Umayyad Caliph. He was born in İsfahān, Persia and studied grammar, philology, ḥadīth, Qur'anic sciences, and history in Baghdad. He was very knowledgeable in the requisites of the convivial companion, such as the narration of anecdotes, fables, poems, and biographies, falconry, farriery, medicine, astrology, music and last but not least, in the preparation of beverages. Al-İsfahānī was a man of the world, who was in great demand in aristocratic circles because of his encyclopaedic knowledge.  

Al-İsfahānī spent fifty years writing his Kitāb al- Aghānī, thanks to the generous patronage system which gave Abbasid scholars the opportunity to work undisturbed by financial concerns. The Kitāb al- Aghānī's 24 volumes, almost ten thousand pages, includes poems and songs from pre-Islamic times to the tenth century; biographies of poets and musicians; and detailed descriptions of literary and music circles. Documenting a song with the name of the poet and composer, along with the modes of rhythm and melody employed, was not enough for Al-İsfahānī. He gave painstaking descriptions of the context in which a song was composed and performed, believing that the context was extremely important for a proper understanding of the text itself. He also gave copious details of the physical, verbal, and social behaviour of both musicians and audience, the process of learning, the process of composition, the process of change, the uses and functions of songs, and

40 Sawa, p. 70.
the cause and nature of textual and musical improvisation. Thus, al-Iṣfahānī’s work was a precursor of our modern musical anthropology\(^{41}\). Although the greater part of the *akhbār* in *kitāb al-aghānī* was transmitted orally to the author, he also cited written works, noting that ‘authors and *ašhāb adab wa akhbar*’ helped to preserve various links of the *isnād* \(^{42}\). Kilpatrick notes that al-Iṣfahānī often refers to written materials by using the terms *nasakhtuhu* and *wajadtuhu* \(^{43}\). Even so, as Zolondek notes, the written works by these authors is under-represented in the *isnād* of *akhbār* in *kitāb al-aghānī* and, moreover, we do not know whether these authors showed a significant interest in the subject\(^{44}\). This problem applies to the *akhbār* of the poets cited throughout the *kitāb al-aghānī* including *'udhrī* poets. Nevertheless, Zolondek argues, it is apparent that Abū al-Faraj had the various transmissions of the "collector sources" in hand and worked systematically from a definite plan both as regards to content and as to the use of the "collector sources" available to him\(^{45}\).

Therefore, when addressing *al-ghazal al-'udhrī*, it seems that al-Iṣfahānī treats this tradition in the same way as the various other traditions detailed in his enormous work. He reports as much as possible of these poets’ *akhbār* and poetry. When he is dealing with a number of reports on a subject and sets out to note their points of divergence, he does not usually follow one main version but integrates the common elements. Even if he does not announce at the beginning that he will

\(^{41}\) *Ibid.*


\(^{44}\) Zolondek, p. 219.

mention them, digressions are sometimes made in the course of a *khabar*\(^{46}\). One might question here how the stories and narratives about udhri poets, starting with *kitāb al-aghañī*, gave rise to certain compositions that in effect marked the beginning of a new tradition. This and similar questions will be discussed in the following section.

### 2.5 Reconstructing the Past

How can we explain the retrospective mood of the ninth and tenth centuries that looked back to *al-ghazal al-'udhri* and prompted scholars to collect this poetry and the narratives about ‘udhri poets of the seventh and early eighth centuries? What happened at that time to spark off a fresh interest in ‘udhri love almost two centuries after the death of the ‘udhri lovers?

I would suggest three assumptions to answer these questions. Firstly, when *al-ghazal al-'udhri* was revived as a literary phenomena in the ninth century, it was not with “new” exponents. Rather, the still living tradition was revivified when the poetry was collected and documented and when the stories that fit somehow with the poetry were collected and retold. Therefore, the restoration of the ‘udhri tradition was partly due to the criticism and authorship movement in the Abbasid age.

Secondly, the foreign influences on Arabic literature, especially from Persia, could also explain the turning back to *al-ghazal al-'udhri*. Moreover, the Persian interest in Majnūn led to the development of narratives about the Arabic origin of the story and the addition of new Sufi elements to it\(^{47}\). Thirdly, concerning moral and ethical

---

\(^{46}\) Kilpatrick, p. 97.

\(^{47}\) To the present, three main characters from Arabic literature still exert an influential presence in Persian literature: Majnun, Ālī b. Ābī ṭalīb and al-Mutanabi.
issues, "the profligacy movement" on one hand and the Sufis and asceticism on the other, were all instrumental in renewing the interest in *al-ghazal al-'udhri*. I will now discuss these three assumptions in turn.

### 2.5.1. The Period of Documentation, Criticism and Authorship

The interest in *al-ghazal al-'udhri* in the ninth and tenth centuries that is evident in the compilations of *al-'udhri* poetry, together with biographical details of the poets that appeared then, is not so surprising, as such documentation had already begun in the ninth century with the collection of both pre-Islamic and post-Islamic poetry as well as the related literary news (*akhbar*)48. Also, literary criticism flourished and the Prophet's ḥadīth were collected during the same period. The time lapse, I would argue, between the appearance of *'udhri* poets in the seventh century and the start of writing about them after a gap of about one and a half centuries should not be considered as a real gap when we bear in mind that literature needs a period of fermentation before literary criticism can properly approach it. In fact, an interest in the authors themselves had already been shown at an earlier time, reappearing through studies and criticism. For example, interest in the stories of *Kalīlah wa dimnah*, by Ibn al-Muqaffa’ (d. 190/759) came back with Abbān b. 'Abd al-Ḥamīd al-Lāḥiqī (d. 200/815 ), and interest in al-Jāḥiz as a personality also came back in the art of *al-maqāma*āt. Therefore, *al-ghazal al-'udhri* returned to captivate the public and scholars alike, alongside every other kind of literary expression. In fact certain figurative elements like the wolf, for instance, returned to recapture the attention of poets. This animal had figured in Arabic poetry of the pre-Islamic era by al-

---

48 The book *Tabaqāt al-shu'ara'*/(Categories of Poets), by Muḥammad b. Sallām al-Jumāhī (d. 232/846) is considered one of the early books which were devoted to collection of poetry and division of poets into categories or classes.
Muraqqash al-Akbar and al-Shanfarā, to reappear with al-Furazdaq in the Umayyad era, and again with al-Buḥturi, al-Sharīf al-Radhi and others in the Abbasid era.49

Hence, it is possible that a literary phenomenon or personality may vanish for a while, and then return in another form. For example, *al-maqaṣmat* appeared in the fourth century A.H, composed by Bādī al-Zaman al-Hamadhanī, before vanishing, only to appear once more in the sixth century A.H by al-Ḥarīrī and thereafter by al-Suqursūṭī. Therefore, it can be said that after the invigoration of *al-ghazal al-'udhri* during the Umayyad era, it came back to life again with the documentation of the Abbasid era. The return of this poetic form is evident in three related areas:

- Documentation: the collection of anecdotes and biographical details (*akhbār*) and poetry of 'udhri poets by Abū Bakr Wālībī, a collector of Majnūn poetry and by Ibn Qutaybah, who collected numerous anecdotes about 'udhri poets in his *al-shīr wa al-shu'ara‘*.

- Criticism: Arabic criticism before the fourth century A.H. was impressionistic and was not aimed to critical intervention as much as it was to demonstrate eloquence. Ibn Qutaybah is considered one of the first critics, establishing rules for literary criticism in his book *al-shīr wa al-shu'ara‘*50. After Ibn Qutaybah came Qudāmah b. Ja'far (d. 337/948), whose book *naqd al-shīr* (*Criticism of Poetry*) shows the influence of the literary criticism translated into Arabic at that time, particularly Aristotle’s *Poetics*. Then two more books on criticism appeared, first al-Āmidī (d. 371/981) and *al-muwāzanah bayna al-ṭāyyyan*, then Alī al-Jurjānī (d. 392/1002) and his work *al-wasaṭah bayna*

50 Ibn Qutaybah divided poetry into types: see his book *al-Shīr wa al-shu'ara‘*, pp. 5-9.
al-Mutanabī wa khusūmuh (Mediation between al-Mutanabī and his opponents). However, criticism did not fully mature to become methodical until the appearance of Ibn Rashīq al-Qayrawānī (d. 456/1064) who penned al-ʿumdah fī ṣināʿat al-shīr wa naqdih (The Pillar in the Creation and Criticism of Poetry) and al-Ḥasan al-ʿAskarī with al-ṣināʿatayn (The Two Industries). Undoubtedly, this rich period of criticism prompted critics to look at the poetry of previous eras including al-ʿudhrī poetry.

- The poetry concerned with courtly love was influenced by al-ghazal al-ʿudhrī as we see in its most illustrious exponent al-ʿAbbās b. al-Āḥnaf (d.188/804), a poet who is considered by some scholars as the natural heir of ʿudhrī poets51, even though the love celebrated in his poetry was eventually fulfilled, and the women were not, by any means, ordinary. The beloved here is rather a high-ranking lady of the court. Perhaps it is the themes of long sorrow and cruel fate that link this poetry to ʿudhrī poetry.

In the light of the foregoing, we see that a literary style can either vanish or be transformed into something new, and it can be subject to a phase of documentation, criticism and analysis. So it was with the reappearance of al-ghazal al-ʿudhrī and the reasons for the rather changed forms largely correspond to the cultural life of the ninth and tenth centuries. At the same time, this mode of poetic expression was also linked to the political and social climate which led to the interest in courtly love (ghazal) poetry, and to the patronage of scholars and poets. The renewed interest in al-ghazal al-ʿudhrī as the poetry of ʿudhrīs and their stories was part of this cultural

revival, constituting rich material for authors writing on the subject of love. First, Al-Jāḥīẓ (d.255/868) authored his dissertation on female singers and women and especially on passionate love, which was his main theme. He defined it, advocating it as a source of goodness, further drawing an analogy between the mirth of singing and the mirth between lovers, also providing comparisons between men and women. By developing his theories on love, Al-Jāḥīẓ laid the groundwork for later writers who devoted whole books to the subject.

Subsequently, from the third century A.H, entire books were written about lovers who died of unfulfilled love for each other. Kitāb al-zahrāh by Ibn Dāwūd al-Anṭākī (d. 296/909) is one of the most acclaimed works that appeared on the theory of love in the ninth century. It ‘initially corresponded to the ideal concepts of Court circles concerning a person of good breeding’. This book makes use of ‘udhri stories and poetry to set a model for “courtly love”. In this book we read: ‘He who wishes to be noble and cultivated must be chaste’, and ‘It is ignoble to treat the beloved in a contemptuous way by describing her’. In this light, we can understand the emphasis placed on chastity in ‘udhri love. During this period, the idea was remodelled to match the new standards of courtly love. Another example of this remodelling is found in a book that appeared in the tenth century which set a new standard of morality for the lover using examples from the past, especially from the ‘udhri stories. The book, al-Muwashshā, by al-Washshā (d. 325/937), states: ‘In the past when a man loved a woman, he did not desert her until death and his heart concerned itself with no other, neither did he endeavour to find consolation elsewhere…and the woman behaved in like manner. When one of them died before

---

52 Al-Jāḥīẓ, al-Rasa’il, p. 166.
53 Walther, p. 159.
the other, the partner either took his own life or lived on only in a spirit of love for
the one he had lost; remaining true, and honouring the memory of the partner 54. Al-
Washsha’, in this text, refers to the ‘udhri relationship as a model, and the book is
filled with references to ‘udhri poets and with quotations from their poetry. Here we
can see the strong influence of these poets, who were much quoted at this time, as
well as how their stories were remodelled to match the contemporary society.

In addition, these books introduced a dramatic element to love as can be seen
in titles such as Mašāri‘ al-’ushshāq "Death of the Passionate Lovers", by al-Sarraj
(d. 500/1106), which greatly popularised the theme that passionate love bore tragic
consequences 55. Much of the content of Mašāri‘ al-’ushshāq appears in numerous
later works, which use ‘udhri love stories as examples of how love affects its victims
and how it often kills them. One of these works, Kitāb al-wādīh al-mubīn fi’dhikr
man istushhida min al-muhbīn, by Mughulṭāy (d.762/1361 ), is devoted entirely to
the martyrs of love. Such drama and death can only be the result of tortured and
deprived love. The al-‘udhri example is the ultimate one for incarnate fidelity both in
love and in separation. Subsequent books on theories of love were suffused with such
idealism. Hence these books emphasised this permanent state of longing and
imparted these values to al-ghazal al-‘udhri in one way or another.

2.5.2. Influence of Sufism and the Persian Interest in al-Ghazal al-‘Udhri

Further interest in al-ghazal al-‘udhri came from abroad, particularly from Persia,
which is closely linked with the Sufism movement that flourished in the Abbasid era.

Hamori, (Love Poetry Ghazal), p. 77.
55 See my discussion about this book and the theme of tragic love in chapter 6, pp. 231-233.
It is well known that the Persians had shown particular interest in the story of Majnūn Laylá. Their greatest poets, specifically Sa'dī and Nizāmī, re-wrote that story until it took a purely Sufi form with the poet ‘Abd al-Rahmān Jamī. Nizāmī’s narrative poem of approximately 4,600 lines is the third of five long narrative poems known collectively as the *Kamsa* (the Quintet). Here are some details about his work:

In composing his romance, Nizāmī used many of the Arabic anecdotes and considered several key elements of the *'udhrī* genre. He refers explicitly to his sources seventeen times, at the beginning of each episode, but none of the sources can be identified with certainty: these references are probably a narrative device to emphasize the romance’s outlandish origin to his Persian readers. Nizāmī adds a strong Persian flavor to the legend. For example, the Nawfal episode is developed into a completely different event, hardly resembling the original Arabic account. The Arabic sources portray Nawfal as an official, but Nizāmī’s Nowfal is a chivalrous Persian chieftain (*javānmard*) ready to risk his life to bring the two lovers together. Nizāmī threads the scattered anecdotes about Majnun’s love into a finely woven narrative with a dramatic climax. Persian verse romances are commonly about princes, and characters are usually related to courtly circles. Likewise, Nizāmī portrays the lovers as aristocrats. He also urbanizes the Bedouin legend: Majnun does not meet Laylá in the desert amongst the camels, but at school with other children. Other Persian motifs added to the story are: (…) Majnun’s supplication to the heavenly bodies and God; his kingship over animals, and his didactic conversations with several characters.

Undoubtedly, these new dimensions given to the story of Majnūn heightened the interest in this poetry. Moreover, some scholars, such as Hilāl, claim that Sufi love is an *'udhrī* love that evolved due to specific philosophical and religious factors. Both types were subject to the creed of Islam and the interpretations of its texts. At the same time, neither of these two expressions of love shied away from the physical side, and in the case of Sufi love, contemplating physical beauty was understood as the way to God. Hilāl also stresses that the Sufis introduced emotional feelings and passion into the anecdotes about Majnūn Laylá, recounting that he became

---

57 Hilāl, p. 38.
unconscious for a short time whenever the name of Laylā was mentioned. With Sufis, fainting was accompanied by a frenzy of love feeling.\(^{59}\)

### 2.5.3. Moral and Ethical Issues

Although “diverting entertainment” appeared in Islamic societies from the Umayyad era onwards, as we see for example in the stories of al-Walīd b. Yazīd, it seems that “the profligacy movement” known as *mujūn*, meaning those who make light of moral values yet also indicating inter alia sexual freedom and the consumption of alcohol, only became widespread in the Abbasid era from the third century A.H. Dayf states that two factors contributed to the spread of *mujūn* in the third and fourth centuries A.H., firstly the appearance of “doubters” like the schools of atheists and *zanādiqaḥ*, and secondly, the popularity of female singers (*qiyaḥ*)\(^{60}\).

The *zanādiqaḥ* movement, which arose in Persia, was originally influenced by the book *al-Afsta* of Zoroaster, developed by Manī who called upon his followers to lead an ascetic life. The movement continued after the advent of Islam and grew during the Abbasid era, particularly during the days of Caliph al-Mahdī who asked *al-mu'tazilah* and *al-mutakalimah* to respond to *zanādikah* who were accused of approving marriage between sisters and brothers as well as fathers and daughters.\(^{61}\)

Concerning the female singers, *al-qiyaḥ*, al-Jaḥiz portrayed their life of singing and seduction through ornament, poetry and voice.\(^{62}\) *Kitāb al-Aghani* also depicts this underside of life which was full of slave girls and female singers.

\(^{59}\) Ibid., p. 91.  
\(^{60}\) Dayf, *al-Fann wa madhabibuh fi al-'asr al-umawi*, p.100.  
\(^{61}\) Ibid., pp. 109-114.  
drinking and singing. It seems that this wave of diversions and mujūn encompassed al-Kūfah, according to Muṭīr b. Iyās, Wālibah and Ḥammad 'Ajrad. A portrayal of Al-Basrah at this time by Bashshar b. Burd, who was fond of wine and women (as can be seen in his poetry), reveals that this city was also submerged under the same wave. Moreover, the two poets Abū Nuwas and al-Ḥusayn b. al-Ḍāhhāk depicted widespread profligacy and homosexuality as characteristic of the era.

Is it possible that the spread of libertinism in the Abbasid era helped to create a desire to return to al-ghazal al-ʿudhri, which is considered to be the utter opposite of libertinism? Walther claims that the renewed interest in ʿudhri love and in composing books on tragic chaste love came about ‘perhaps because people had had enough of the constantly increasing fickleness of erotic relationships’.

However, from my point of view, we should be cautious regarding such interpretations; how do we know that erotic relationships were increasingly fickle? Perhaps they are represented as such in texts but we cannot assume that this representational history, if it is even borne out, bears any relationship to the history of lived relationships. Al-Aghānī contains accounts of ʿudhrīs and the ascetics. But also, we find in al-Aghānī, tens of stories about profligates and a depiction of palace life as being indulged in extravagance and libertinism.

It also depicts the life of poor poets. On the other hand, we observe that asceticism and Sufism had started to take root in society alongside the alleged emergence of mujūn and libertinism. Dayf explains that the wave of asceticism in the

---

63 It was the inclination of Abū al- Faraj al-Īsfahānī to spread such accounts (stories) in order to inform the public of what was going on inside the palaces of their caliphs and princes as well as matters which took away their sanctity?
64 Dayf, p. 103.
65 Walther, pp. 157-158.
Abbasid era was not less intense than the wave of mujūn and may have arrived as a foreign influence from Indian asceticism and Christian monasticism. Abū al-‘Atāḥyah was perhaps one of the most important ascetic poets, after starting his life as a mujūn and ending up by extolling asceticism, death, and the grave\(^66\).

### 2.6 Contradictory Texts on Physicality in the ‘Udhri Tradition

As we have seen from the previous sections, the period of documentation and authorship led to an interest in collecting the poetry and narratives of the ‘udhri poets. Later on, the elements of ‘iffah (chastity) in this tradition were refined. But, a close examination reveals a kind of contradiction regarding the issue of ‘iffah and physicality in ‘udhri poetry and akhbar, which appeared in important sources like al-Aghani. Perhaps the structure of al-Aghani and the way it was composed contributed to this contradiction, as we shall see.

Despite the scholarly emphasis on the ‘iffah (chastity) of ‘udhri poets, it is a fact that the beloved is noticeably present throughout the genre of al-ghazal al-‘udhri. The ‘udhri poet celebrates his beloved’s corporal beauty in all its glory, and he often refers to his desire for her. Yet, and at some poetic and narrative levels, he claims that a physical contact with his beloved did not occur. How are we to understand the contradictions found within the ‘udhri tradition regarding physical contact between the lovers? For example, Jamiil was reported to have said on his deathbed: ‘May Muḥammad not be my saviour (in the other world) if my hand ever touched Buthaynah for a suspicious thing. All I used to do is to rest her hand on my

---

\(^66\) Dayf, pp. 114-115.
heart in order to have some relief\textsuperscript{67}. Is this statement simply due to his piety, or does he imply that the ideal beauty the poetry depicts is unpossessable, even unthinkable? In Ibn Qutaybah’s book \textit{al-Shi’r wa al-shu’ara’} we also read: ‘Jamil is among those who are content with very little’\textsuperscript{68}. He cites these famous verses composed by Jamīl:

\begin{quote}
I am pleased with very little things accorded to me by Buthaynah
They are so insignificant
that if they were known by the man (who spies us)
he would not be annoyed with my love
I am pleased even when she says: “no” or “I cannot”
And when she makes me live on promises..
promises hoped for, but always disappointing
I am pleased with a quick glance to her,
and even with spending a whole year without our meeting
neither at the beginning nor at the end\textsuperscript{69}.
\end{quote}

In other verses Jamīl says:

\begin{quote}
I know nothing of what lies beneath her clothes,
nor have I ever kissed her,
I have never touched her.
We just talked and were lost in each other’s eyes\textsuperscript{70}.
\end{quote}

Moreover, a number of related themes appear in the passages contained in \textit{al-Agha\textbari}. For instance, Jamīl asked Buthaynah during a conversation in her tent one night:

‘Would not you like now to give me the reward of all my ardent love for you?’ She answered, ‘What do you mean?’ Said Jamīl, ‘The thing that normally happens between lovers’. Buthaynah refuses brusquely, seeing that she will not see him again should he hint at this ever again. But now Jamīl says: ‘I only wanted to know your

\textsuperscript{67} \textit{Ibn Qutaybah}, p. 442.
\textsuperscript{68} \textit{Ibn Qutaybah}, p. 442.
\textsuperscript{70} Jamīl, p. 49.
opinion about that. Had you complied with my wish, I would have killed you with my sword immediately, because if you granted it to me, I knew that you would grant it to others too.\textsuperscript{71}

One can be easily captivated by such verses and anecdotes, which can be found in a number of sources that deal with the theme of love within Islamic and Arab history, such as \textit{Maṣāri‘ al-‘ushshaq}, \textit{Rawdat al-muḥibbīn}, and \textit{al-Muwashshā}. Nevertheless, we may observe a striking phenomenon in this tradition at both the poetic level and at the narrative level. This phenomenon can be traced through the existence of the two contradictory notions in interpretations of one single source. Indeed, as can be seen, if certain narrators have related stories about ‘\textit{udhri}\textsuperscript{72}’ lovers making a particular claim about them, others relate stories that give the opposite impression. Even with regard to the physical descriptions of the beloved in ‘\textit{udhri}\textsuperscript{72}’ tradition, different narrators have been inclined to give often incompatible statements. For example, the following episode suggests the ugliness of Buthaynah: Jamīl was in a \textit{ḥammām} in Egypt when an old man observed his beauty and asked him who he was. When he realised that he was Jamīl, Buthayna’s famous lover, he said to him: ‘what do you like about her? I saw her and I swear that her hock is so sharp that it can be used to slaughter a bird’. Jamīl replied: ‘Oh sir, if you could just see her through my eyes, you would be happy to commit adultery within the eyes of God’.\textsuperscript{72}

One should note the link that Jamīl suggested between Buthaynah’s beauty and his desire, a desire which was great enough to compel him to use the word


adultery. However, in another context, Buthaynah was described by the famous poet ‘Umar b. Abī Rabī‘ah, after he had a conversation with her, as a tall beautiful woman. In *al-Shi‘r wa al-shu‘ra‘*, a storyteller describes Buthaynah as being like the full moon to indicate her beauty. Likewise, in another passage in *al-Aghānī*, Layla asks a woman to scrutinise Layla’s [her] body and to report ‘whether Majnūn lied or told the truth’, whereupon the verdict comes: ‘No, by God, he spoke veraciously’. The notion that Majnūn must have really known Layla’s body to be able to describe it precisely, as the above anecdote suggests, is at the heart of this anecdote. Moreover, Layla is shown ‘pleasureably absorbed in and musing with her friend over the matter of whether the poet-lover has described her physical appearance in a flattering manner, whether his poetry had appealingly mirrored her’. However, Majnūn’s verses suggest another view regarding Layla’s appearance from the point of view of a censurer who associated her with shortness and ugliness, but Majnūn insists on his love for her despite the blamer’s opinion.

As has been seen, these kinds of contradictions in episodes evince confusion over the portrayal of the ‘udhri poets’ beloveds. Buthaynah’s portrayal, for instance, incites Khristū Najm to say:

Buthaynah’s character is excessively ambiguous! She is beautiful and ugly, Bedouin and urban, chaste and profane, she lives in poverty in the desert and in luxury in towns. She was forced to marry a Bedouin to remove her disgrace, and then, they consoled her after the death of her lover. She wanders in ‘Udhra faubourg and then appears in the palace of the caliph. She appears as a prodigy of contradiction.

76 Khan, p. 273.
77 See Majnun, p. 252.
78 Najm, p. 116.
The classical Arabic text simultaneously provides contradictory anecdotes, perhaps an attempt to leave the door open for discussions, probabilities and open-ended predictions. It seems that Abu al-Faraj al-Iṣfahānī was aware of the ambiguity that his anecdotes provided. Thus, he chose a simple strategy: ascribe responsibility to the narrator. By adopting this strategy, al-Aghānī contains a plethora of contradictory episodes.

This phenomenon is evident in ‘udhrī poetry and in the anecdotes written about it. Majnūn, for instance, says:

If Layla’s husband is among you,
then I swear by God that I kissed her on the mouth eighty times.
And I swear by God that I saw her and twenty of her fingers—were clutching at my back.

Yet he also says:

When I want to kiss Layla she turns away
Like a horse with a loud neigh
And she bites her thumb and nods to say:
I am afraid that people will see.

The contexts in which the poet recited these verses differ. He might have said them in different phases of his relationship with Layla, which might have taken on various forms. What concerns us here is the contradiction, if we may term it as such, that exists in the body of ‘udhrī poetry. This contradiction stresses the ambiguity surrounding the concept of bodily contact between the two lovers.

Yet, this ambiguity is not restricted to ‘udhrī anecdotes; some of these contradictory anecdotes and verses have been reported about ‘Umar b. Abī Rabī’ah,

---

79 This sentence appears frequently in al-Aghānī. “والمعهدة على الراوي,” “the responsibility lies with the narrator.”
80 Majnūn, p. 237.
81 Majnūn, p. 191.
a poet represented by researchers as the antithesis of the ‘udhrī tradition, and the leader of a sensual school of Arabic poetry. On one hand, ‘Umar actually confesses that he did everything he described in his poetry, but that he asked God for forgiveness. However, another anecdote reports him saying: ‘I swear by God that I never told a woman something she did not want to hear, nor have I touched a woman that I was forbidden to touch’. Hence, this game has long been present in the classical Arabic literary text. Besides the popular anecdotes, there have also been other lesser-known anecdotes that open doors for other views on this issue; the only difference is that the other anecdotes are less popular. Occasionally, an episode hints at a different interpretation. For instance, the aforementioned episode in which Jamīl asks Buthaynah to reward all his ardent love for her: this was apparently only a test of her purity, and her refusal of his advances was really what he was seeking. This episode shows the ‘udhrī couple to be perfectly chaste, but there is a hint in this story that might suggest a different disposition. The rest of the story shows that Buthaynah’s father and brother were watching the two with swords under their gowns, and that, after hearing this dialogue, they went away saying to each other: ‘We need not hinder this man from meeting her any more’. As J.C. Bürgel observes:

Taking into account the fact that Jamil appears much more active and cunning in the stories than his ‘udhrī colleagues ever do, we may not exclude that in this case he made a serious proposal but sensing either the coy reserve of Buthaynah or the presence of her guardians, or the one as well as the other, he withdrew into the ‘udhrī guise or pose.

82 Al-İsfahani, vol. 1, p. 87.
83 Ibid.
85 J.C. Bürgel, p. 94.
Most contemporary Arabic studies try to ignore this contradiction by elevating the status of the texts that emphasise the chastity of the ‘udhrī poet\textsuperscript{86}. This chastity is usually attributed to the effect of Islamic traditions on the poet’s attitude. Other texts that were graphically sensual were rejected and attributed to wrong ascription, without substantial evidence. Therefore, such studies do not handle ‘udhrī love as a well-rounded phenomenon where reality and history intersect with the imaginary, but pick and choose what the researchers fancy, and what they are disposed to believe of the virtue of ‘udhrī love.

Therefore, instead of ignoring the contradiction within poetry and narratives ascribed to ‘udhrī poets, one may see it within a duality of both bodily presence and absence. It is also valid to assert that the difference between chaste and sensualist poetry may be attributed to the mood of a particular poet, or the phase the poet is going through. Or, as ‘Abdullah argues, it may be that these differences in contradicting anecdotes about sensual and virtue poetry and narratives within ‘udhrī tradition, are a result of the different experiences of the young poet and the mature poet\textsuperscript{87}. As may be observed, Abdullah’s opinion in paradoxical anecdotes reported about ‘udhrī poets emphasises the element of time, which is a decisive element, and which is important if we are to understand the ‘udhrī tradition.

Accordingly, was the ‘udhrī poet going through various phases in his relationship with his lover? Or was he playing a game, drawing closer and then withdrawing from his object of desire? Approaching her to satisfy his desire, and departing so as to inflame his love? Obviously, human emotions within love are quite

\textsuperscript{86} Except for few studies which led to further discussions in the subject such as, al-‘Azm’s \textit{Fi al-ḥubb wa al-ḥubb al-‘udhrī} and Labib’s \textit{Susyūljya al-ghazal al-‘Arabī: al-shī‘r al-‘udhrī namūdhanān}.
\textsuperscript{87} ‘Abdallah, p. 245.
complex and cannot be simply classified into the two categories of virtuous and sensuous (and these may not necessarily be opposing concepts). This fact gives love poetry a conflicting nature as the poet’s emotions fluctuate between the unattainable glorified image of his lover, and his own instinctive desire to unite with her.

Hence, we are not supposed to cut short the historical event, nor should we curtail the text. We should believe first, that the phenomenon of al-ghazal al- ‘udhri exists and that the anecdotes about poets is part of its existence, and then analyse its historical credibility and mythical possibility. The role played by story tellers (ruwāḥ) should not be neglected here as they paid special attention to love stories because they were so popular with their audiences. A statement by Ibn Qayyim al-Jawziyyah (d.1349/751) shows clearly this popularity:

> While the commoner’s fame is incomparable with that of King is and brave as being heroes, he gains his celebrity when he falls in love. He even mentioned in the presence of Kings, Caliphs and their successors. His stories are recorded and his poems get recited. Poetry makes his existence eternal. Without love, he would not be mentioned nor would he be able to be paid any attention.

It is plausible to argue that the story tellers tried to please their audiences with details about the meetings and sweet conversation between lovers and, at the same time, they made sure to keep within the bounds of conservative tradition, and direct the poets to the right and acceptable path. The mainstream inclination towards perpetuating conservative tradition is evident in a narrative about ‘Umar b. Abī Rabī’ah. The narrative claims that ‘Umar had never acted upon his religious desire; despite the fact that his poetry is abundant with sensual love scenes.

---

89 See al-İsfahani, vol. 1, p. 87.
Significantly, these contrasts highlight the latent contradiction in the ‘udhrī’ love tradition and it could be argued that they show a manifest obsession about physical contact between ‘udhrī’ lovers. Whether the narratives allude to the fact that physical contact took place in their relationships, or claim its absence, the result is still the same. The body lies at the heart of the ‘udhrī’ tradition. The lack of possession/physicality only serves to heighten the desire since it only draws more attention to that which is being denied. Hence, this shows us the privileged position of the body by the prominent duality of its presence and absence. The very concept of chasteness involves a conscious denial of physical contact, and this consciousness often implies a strong awareness of physicality.
Tradition between Chastity and Sensuality

3.1 Introduction

This chapter will discuss the concepts of sexuality, marriage and chastity in Islamic discourse, which includes Islamic jurisprudence as well as Islamic culture in general. I will clarify how I use Islamic jurisprudence as a source, in discussing the Islamic emphasis on marriage versus a discernible ‘udhri attitude towards this social institution. On the other hand, the implications of chastity as understood in the stories about ‘udhri poets and theories of love will be discussed, while taking into consideration the context of the ninth and tenth centuries. A problematic relationship exists between the ‘udhri tradition and the prevalent Islamic discourse around sexuality and love, however. On one hand, it seems that al-ghazal al-‘udhri was influenced by several elements brought by the new faith, notably monotheism as well as the description of hūr al-‘ayn, which will be discussed in detail later. On the other hand, the ‘udhri tradition moved away from the simple and direct approach of Islamic discourse towards chastity and marriage to create its own models of love and physical union.

Using the term "chastity" as a translation of the term ‘iffah does not imply that the word "chastity", as it appears in English discourse, is equivalent to the word ‘iffah as it is used in Arabic and Islamic discourse. Nevertheless, I have chosen to use this term, ‘chastity’, because it is the English word that most closely approximates the Arabic ‘iffah. Both words convey the meaning of restraining oneself from realizing certain desires. Other possible words include, "loyalty", which is useful in terms of

---

1 In OED these definitions are provided for chastity: 1- Purity from unlawful sexual intercourse; continence. 2- Abstinence from all sexual intercourse; virginity, celibacy. 3- Exclusion of meretricious
the ’udhri poets’ attitude towards their beloved, but loyalty does not convey the complexity of attitude and action, concerning sexuality and sociality, that ‘iffah encompasses. ‘Chastity’ does imply the complicated relationship between sensuality (seemingly the best translation of the Arabic term hissyyah), and ‘iffah, or sexual probity, in Islamic and ’udhri discourse. This separation of ‘iffah and sensuality is not to deny their close connection; I make it purely for analytic purposes. As we shall see, the two terms are not always opposites. Indeed, in al-ghazal al-’udhri, these two terms are complementary.

3.2 Sources

‘Islamic discourse’ cannot be seen as monovocal. Any investigation of sexuality and marriage in discourses associated with Islam should make use of multiple sources, both religious and more broadly cultural. We do not have the scope in this dissertation to elaborate fully the Islamically inflected discussions on these socially central topics, but for contextual purposes we refer to those textual areas closest to the topic at hand. To some extent, poetry and literary prose, which could be defined by the general term adab, can offer an insight into the sexual lives of medieval Muslims, although we must always keep in mind the caveats mentioned earlier about conflating textual representations and lived experiences. In this chapter, I will refer to some of this literature, especially that which has appeared in books as collections of anecdotes and poetry about love among Arabs. At the same time, to neglect

ornament; purity of style, modesty, chasteness. On the other hand, in Līsān al-‘Arab, ‘iffah is defined as: Refraining from all that is forbidden. To refrain oneself from greed and what is forbidden by religion. A chaste woman: a woman who protects her private parts. As we can see, the first definition of chastity is very close to the definition of ‘iffah.
certain major works and genres of Islamic literature such as the Qur’an, Ḥadīth, tafsīr and fiqh would make this image incomplete and incoherent. And thus we must start with the Qur’an.

For example, fuqaha’s elaborated on very sensitive issues concerning sexuality with ease and comfort. As Maghen observes, ‘nor did they feel the need to excuse this explicitness, from which even the adab literature largely shied away from, by evoking the merits of reproduction’\(^2\). There is no feeling of shame in their discourse over this explicitness, however, and they were thus far freer in their treatment of sensitive erotic issues than the early physicians or the poets and udabā’\(^3\). When proof-texts were needed by the fuqaha’in the framework of legal debates on tahārah, scores of anecdotes appeared in which [sexual activities] were ascribed to the Prophet, his wives and his Companions\(^4\). Therefore, these religious sources reveal much about how Muslims thought and acted regarding the body, its desires, activities and the rituals related to it. In comparing adab and fiqh, Maghen states that the formulation in fiqh may be less fine than that found in adab and the descriptions less exciting or adventurous, but those who are interested in discovering as much as possible about the daily dealings of the ordinary Muslim man and woman of other places and times must proceed first to the canon of the establishment. At any rate, they must not limit themselves solely to the canon of the anti-establishment\(^5\).

Maghen also maintains that the code of purity offers a unique window on gender relations and notions of sensuality at different times and places in Muslim societies\(^6\).

\(^3\) Ibid.
\(^4\) Ibid., p. 120. There are many examples of those anecdotes, a number of them were quoted by Maghen and ascribed even to Muslim women like Umm Sulaym, who made this statement during her inquiry to the Prophet about a sensitive issue: ‘God is not embarrassed by the truth’. For a more elaborate discussion see Maghen, pp. 120-125.
\(^5\) Ibid., p. 129.
\(^6\) Ibid. p. 133.
The panorama here is wide and representative. Within this purity code the *fuqaha* saw it as their duty to discover what aroused the majority of people. Therefore, jurisprudence is probably the best place to discover what specific Muslim communities, at various times and in various places, found sexually appealing.\(^7\)

Correspondingly, *fuqaha* debates over the various interpretations of particular verses of the Qur'an and Ḥadīth can show their attitude to the body and sexuality. For example, by studying the various opinions on whether or not touching one's genitals cancels one's state of purity, Katz observes that the different views are signs of the differing attitudes towards the human body. One view stigmatises some parts of the body as unclean while the other affirms that the human person is pure in its entirety.\(^8\)

### 3.3 The Body in the Qur'an

Not all references to the body in the Qur'an have negative connotations, as they are not associated with repression or profanation. In Iqbal 'Urawi's analysis of the Qur'anic view of the body, he indicates that the nature and functions of the body prove the truth of monotheism and the greatness of God because he creates them so perfectly. In addition, certain Qur'anic verses refer to particular parts of the body in a way that reveals the omnipotence of God and His miraculous power in creating these parts.\(^9\) Other verses describe the stages of development of the human body from the foetus to the formation of the entire body, again indicating nothing profane: 'Man We did create from a quintessence (of clay); Then We placed him as (a drop of) sperm in

---

\(^7\) *Ibid.*


\(^9\) Al-Balad (90:9), Al-Infiṭar (82:6-8).
a place of rest, firmly fixed; Then We made the sperm into a clot of congealed blood; then of that clot We made a (foetus) lump; then we made out of that lump bones and clothed the bones with flesh; then we developed out of it another creature. So blessed be God, the best to create’

Urawī argues that 'The prevalent phenomenon of viewing the body as profane means that women are perceived as concealing evil in their bodies, thereby denigrating the female sex. Thus, linking the above phenomenon to Islam contradicts the actual references to the body in the Qur’an'.

In addition, 'Urawī asserts that the body is also presented in the Qur’an as a subject of "ziţa as in the following verse: 'Say: Who hath forbidden the beautiful (gifts)[ziţa] of God, which He hath produced for His servants, and the things, clean and pure, ta'iyybaţ (which He hath provided) for sustenance? Say: They are, in the life of this world, for those who believe, (and) purely for them on the Day of Judgment. Thus do We explain the signs in detail for those who understand'. This representation personifies the body as a reflection of all the beauty of nature and the universe. In this case, the body is not necessarily linked to the other ta'iyybaţ, like food and drink.

According to the Qur’an, the body is more than a mere physical necessity, as man is urged to enjoy its beauty. Moreover, the verse does not confine the treatment of the body to "ziţa but extends to a reminder that the body should be counted as one of God’s greatest blessings. In addition to the fact that body is created for a purpose in this life, it will also bring pleasure in the next life. The appearance of believers on the last day is often described as good: '(Other) faces that Day will be joyful, which will

---

10 Al-Mu’minun (23:12-14).
12 Al-A’ra’af (8:32).
neither nourish nor satisfy hunger.'14. God will admit those who believe and work righteous deeds, to Gardens beneath which rivers flow: they shall be adorned therein with bracelets of gold and pearls; and their garments there will be of silk.15. ‘Urawi concludes by saying that the Qur’anic speech celebrates the body and sets directions not only to purify but also to beautify it16. Thus, contrary to the claims of other scholars17, ‘Urawi affirms that not all references to the body in the Qur’an have negative connotations.

There are many references in the Qur’an to the physical connection between men and women. For example, ‘They are your garments and ye are their garments. Allah knoweth what ye used to do secretly among yourselves; but He turned to you and forgave you; so now associate with them, and seek what Allah hath ordained for you’ve.18 There are also several Qur’anic verses giving a clear description of the creation of human beings19. In fact, the Qur’an alludes to the nature of sexual

---

14 Al-Ghašiyah (88:7-8).
15 Al-Ḫaǧ (22:23).
16 ‘Urawi, p. 29.
17 The question of the body in Islam is mishandled in Fuad I Khuri’s contribution on this subject. In his book The Body in Islamic Culture, he tackles the question of the body in Islam from too narrow a perspective. For instance, he examines the Qur’anic verses only superficially, ignoring their various interpretations. He claims that the same anecdote about Adam and Eve occurs in both the Old Testament and the Qur’an. However, it is clearly stated in the Old Testament that it was Eve who was tempted by Satan to eat the forbidden fruit, and that she, in turn, tempted Adam to eat it, while the Qur’an states that both Adam and Eve were tempted by Satan: Satan, trying to seduce him [Adam], said: “Do you want me to show you the Tree of Eternity and the Everlasting Kingdom?” Adam and his wife [Eve] ate [the fruit] from the tree and found themselves naked. Then they began to cover themselves with the leaves from the Garden. Adam disobeyed his Lord and went astray. His Lord accepted his repentance, forgave him and gave him guidance” (20:120–122). Moreover, the notion of the essential impurity of women is rejected in Islam. Nevertheless, to support his idea of the preference for virgin brides in Islam, Khuri quotes certain verses from the Qur’an, apparently without realising that they refer to al-ḥūra al-‘ayn in Paradise, not to earthly women. On the same page, he quotes the following hadith: ‘A woman is contracted in marriage for her looks, wealth, or noble origin.’ However, he neglects to complete this hadith. ‘So try to obtain one who is religious, may your hand be besmeared with dust [may you enjoy the benefits]. These omissions and misreadings betray a bias or blind spot in Khuri’s interpretation of Islamic discourse around sexuality. (Fuad. I. Khuri, The Body in Islamic Culture (London: al-Saqi Books, 2001).
18 Al-Baqarah (2:183–7).
19 Al-Mu’mínun (23:12–17).
relations as a means of attaining mutual satisfaction, closeness and compassion between a wife and husband\textsuperscript{20}. In the Qur’an, God’s creation of mates is considered one of His signs: ‘And among His signs is this: that He created for you mates from among yourselves, that you may dwell in tranquility with them and He has put love and mercy between you; in this are signs for those who reflect\textsuperscript{21}.

3.4 Defilement and Purification

Within its concern about the human body, Islamic law provides guidance for the treatment of one’s own body regarding its defilement and purification\textsuperscript{22}. Indeed, as Katz observes: ‘Islamic legal discourse on the body, its healthy functioning, and various discontents is meaningful and that analysis of this discourse reveals an important aspect of Muslims’ understanding of the human experience\textsuperscript{23}; this being the kind of analysis her study offers. She argues that:

> Self-conscious and systematic juristic discussion of the rules relating to the pollution and ablution was preceded by the emergence of a quite coherent and unified tradition of popular practice whose authority was such that it generally prevailed in the face of theoretical challenge\textsuperscript{24}.

On the other hand, the Islamic law of purification \textit{tahārah}, which required Muslims to wash after certain bodily activities, does not imply a base view of the human body in Islam. On the contrary, it indicates that no human beings, whether male or female, may be described as impure. Katz states that:

\textsuperscript{20} \textit{An Islamic Perspective on Sexuality}, by the Muslim Women’s League, http://www.mwlusa.org/topics/sexuality/sexuality_pos.html, 5 November 2007.

\textsuperscript{21} Al-Rum (30:21).

\textsuperscript{22} Not just Islam, in fact, many religions subject their followers to strictures of purity. As Katz explains, Jews, Zoroastrians, Christians, and even ancient Greece set rites of purification before engaging in ritual activities or entering sacred spaces. For more details see Katz, pp.3-5.

\textsuperscript{23} Katz, p.1.

\textsuperscript{24} \textit{Ibid.}, pp. 96-97.
[A] reciprocal understanding of the rule suggested that the source of pollution was not the body of either of the individuals concerned, but the act of touching itself. This inference established a parallel between the act of touching women, and the other acts requiring the renewal of one's ʿwuduʾ ablutions, all of which are bodily functions one has oneself performed rather than instances of contagion by another person or substance. What is envisioned is not a quality of substantive impurity inherent in bodies of either sex, but a quality of pollution ascribed to heterosexual contact. Some scholars see the symbolic structures of ritual purity in the paradigm of the fundamental dichotomy between nature and culture. As Katz puts it: 'A corollary of this interpretation, in which rites of purity are seen to function as cultural responses to the irreducible residuum of the natural in human life, is that the fundamental *raison d’etre* of these rites is the reassertion of control.' The central insight of this theory, represented mainly by Mary Douglas, is that 'purity practices must be understood to emerge from, and in turn to constitute, symbolic systems.'

Regarding the sources of law that deal with the body, especially regarding its purity, Katz concludes that '[the]purity law emerged from the social and political interplay among rulers, scholars, and ordinary Muslims as well as from the theoretical interplay between authoritative text and unifying theory.

### 3.5 Positive Perspective on Sexuality

It can be observed that Islam ‘always took care to admit that sexuality existed as a problematic element in the relationship of the individual and society and never hesitated to leave room for the discussion of approval or disapproval’ F. It should

---

27 *Ibid.*, p. 29. However, despite the influence of this view on the study of ritual purity, it has been criticised several times as Katz has detailed. pp. 16-18.
be noted that the body is given a remarkably high status in Islam. As Bouhdiba puts it, Islam:

in no way tries to depreciate, still less to deny, the sexual. On the contrary, it attributes a sublime significance to the sexual and invests it with such a transcendental quality that any trace of guilt is removed from it\(^{30}\).

Although the ‘udhrî tradition devotes itself to highlighting marriage by drawing attention to its absence, marriage is strongly recommended in Islam and indeed is regarded as a cornerstone of Islamic belief and practice. The word \textit{nikâh} (marriage) appears in the Qur’an twenty three times\(^{31}\). In his extensive study of sexuality in Islam, Bouhdiba stresses this point in every way. He quotes many hadiths showing the privileged status of marriage and the unfavourable status of divorce: ‘The profound meaning of the institution of \textit{nikâh}, an institution given great importance in Islam, lies in the recognition of the harmony of the human couple as an essential ideal of life’\(^{32}\), insofar as the ‘unity based on \textit{nikâh} is a creative mission, because it is based on freedom assumed within the framework of life with others’\(^{33}\). Therefore, Bouhdiba assumes that this essential intuition makes \textit{nikâh} a sacred mission, in which the notions of guilt and sin are absent. It is worth noting that the theme of ‘sacred sex’ also appears in many other contributions to the subject\(^{34}\).

\(^{31}\) See, for example, Al-Nisa‘ (3: 22), Al-Nur (24: 32).
\(^{32}\) Bouhdiba, pp. 90–91.
\(^{33}\) \textit{Ibid.}, p.91.
According to many scholars, there is no doubt that Islam strongly favours marriage\textsuperscript{35}. It is often mentioned that the Prophet himself ‘established marriage and legal sexual intercourse as a general sunnah’\textsuperscript{36}. Thus, we can find many hadiths dealing with the question of sex and marriage in the sunnah:

O young men, those among you who can support a wife should marry, for it restrains the eyes [from casting evil glances] and preserves one from immorality; but he who cannot afford it should observe a fast, for it is a means of controlling sexual desire\textsuperscript{37}.

Narrated Ibn Masud: We used to fight in the holy battles in the company of the Prophet and we had no wives with us. So we said, “O Allah’s Apostle! Shall we get castrated?” The Prophet forbade us to do so\textsuperscript{38}.

Hence, scholars have drawn the conclusion from these and other hadiths that Islam views sex in a positive light, as it encourages sexual enjoyment (provided it is within marriage). Also, the Prophet was open to the discussion of this topic with the believers:

Let none of you come upon his wife like an animal, let there be an emissary between them. When asked what the emissary was, he replied, "The kiss and sweet words".\textsuperscript{39}

Bellamy points out that the Prophet’s promotion of marriage is used in the argument against celibacy. In addition, his treatment of his wives is given as an example of the fairness due to each of several wives\textsuperscript{40}. It seems that strong encouragement of marriage is predominant in Islamic thinking in spite of certain Sufi voices calling for

\textsuperscript{35} The acceptance of sexuality as a healthy aspect of life is a decisive cultural difference between Arabic and Western religious thinking, also reflected in their different versions of Paradise. See Doris Behrens-Abouseif, \textit{Beauty in Arabic Culture} (Princeton, NJ : Markus Wiener, 1999), p. 70.


\textsuperscript{40} Bellamy, p. 30.
celibacy. It is hard to ignore all the traditions that connect lawful sex and spiritual rewards. When the Prophet stated: ‘In the sexual act of each of you there is a sadaqah’, his companions were astonished, asking: ‘Oh Messenger of God! When one of us fulfils his sexual desire, will he be given a (spiritual) reward for that? The prophet explained: ‘Do you think that were he to act upon it (lustful desire) unlawfully, he would be sinning? Likewise, if he acts upon it lawfully he will be rewarded’. Furthermore, ‘love has its finality in procreation, which is the gift of existence, the promotion to existence of a new being (...). So the act of generation is highly commendable: (Couple and multiply), the prophet was to order. Accordingly, it is a work of piety to convince others to marry. The Qur’an says explicitly: ‘Marry those among you who are single, or the virtuous ones among yourselves, male or female: if they are in poverty, Allah will give them means out of His grace: for Allah encompasseth all, and He knoweth all things’. The prophet says: ‘To marry is to perform half of one’s religious duty’. Marriage, then, is half of faith. ‘The personality of man finds fulfillment only in the intimacy of the sexes. The unity based on nikah is a creative mission, because it is based on a freedom assumed within the framework of life with others’.

---

41 In the early period of Islam, Bellamy says, there was a movement in favour of celibacy. He quotes the following hadith: ‘Abdullah b. ‘Umar related that once they were on a raid and had no means of sexual gratification. They asked: “Why do we not castrate ourselves?” But the Prophet forbade that. He argues that centuries later, celibacy reappeared among the Sufis. He highlights the attitude of some of the later Sufis such as, Ibrahim b. Adham and Bishr al-Hafi, the latter fearing that he would be an executioner on the bridge if he had a family. In general, they worried about being distracted by worldly concerns from the worship of God. The same point is made by al-Ghazali, who recommended the Sufi murid to avoid marriage at the beginning of his career. For more details see Bellamy, pp. 32-34.

42 Muslim b. al-Ḥajjaj al-Qushayri, Sahih Muslim, vol. 2, Book 5, Number 2198, p. 482.
44 Al-Nur (24:32).
46 Bouhdiba, p. 91.
Classical Arabic books on the question of sexuality are numerous. In his work *al-jins wa ‘ulamā’ al-Islām*[^47^], Ibrāḥīm ʻĪsā states that there are more than a hundred books written by medieval Muslim scholars on this subject. Many of the modern studies devote one or more chapters to a discussion of these medieval sources. For instance, Bouhdiba’s work *Sexuality in Islam* includes a chapter entitled “Erotology”, in which the author cites a variety of treatises and books attributed to al-Jāḥiz, al-Tīfāshī, al-Nīfzāwī and many others, all dealing with sexuality. The author also refers to the large volume of this kind of literature.

However, the modern sources that address sexuality and the body in Arab Muslim culture seem to differ in their points of view and in the conclusions they draw. Whereas some sources focus on the concepts of love and sex as they are treated in the Qur’an and Sunnah, others rely on the interpretations of the *fuqūh*[^47^], and yet other focus on history or poetry. Consequently, some sources assert that Islam ‘warmly recommend[s] believers to take their share of sexual pleasures, which are an essential prefiguration of the pleasures of Paradise’[^48^], whereas others advise sexual repression and the restriction of physical freedom in Islam. Moreover, where some authors are struck by the straightforward language often used to describe the body in Muslim cultures, others highlight its modesty. As this is a huge area of research, however, I shall focus on only the crucial contributions that shed light upon the topics with which I am concerned in this thesis.

Bouhdiba asserts that in the practice of love, the Qur’an describes a balanced approach, but he argues that this has not been translated into social practice. In other words, what was unified in revelation fell apart at the historical level. Bouhdiba also

addresses the subject of variations on eroticism: misogyny, mysticism and *mujuʿ*, maintaining that they are three ways of dealing with the single problem: misogyny encloses Muslims in their own empire, *mujuʿ* releases their inhibitions, and mysticism sublimates them⁴⁹. The sensuality of Paradise is also discussed in his chapter “The Infinite Orgasm”, where Bouhdiba argues that the sensual nature of paradisiacal pleasures means that the physical aspect of the body is not scorned. The author quotes from the Islamic texts that provide details of the infinite pleasure to be had with houris. He concludes by addressing the crisis of sexuality and the crisis of faith in contemporary Arab-Muslim society, emphasising the role that colonization played in the degradation of women.

The subject of sensuality in Paradise has been frequently addressed by scholars, many of them relying heavily on Bouhdiba’s analysis. For example, in his essay “Sexuality, Diversity and Ethics in the Agenda of Progressive Muslims”, Scott A. Kugle explains that the depiction of Paradise in the Qur’an ‘is not just bodily, but sensually delightful and even sexually blissful’⁵⁰. According to the 55th chapter of the Qur’an, for the God-fearing are stored up –*inter alia* -two gardens containing all kinds (of trees and delights)… In each (garden) two springs will flow freely… In them will be fruits of every kind… and in (the gardens) will be chaste maidens, restraining their glances, whom no man or jinn has touched, (whose complexions) will be like unto rubies and coral⁵¹. We read elsewhere that the deserving shall lounge on thrones set in lines⁵², wear fine and thick silk⁵³, and that round about them

---

⁴⁹ Bouhdiba, p. 117.  
⁵² Al-Ṭūr (52:20).
shall go ever-blooming youths bearing goblets and ewers, and cups of pure drink. (And there will be) fruits that they choose, and flesh of fowl that they desire, and fair ones with wide, lovely eyes, like unto hidden pearls. Nevertheless, the sensual nature of paradisiacal recompense is the subject of debate, having been lampooned in the West.

This positive perspective on sexuality infuses the famous jurist al-Suyūtī's (d.1505/911) contribution to the subject. He wrote many books on it, the best-known one being *al-Īdāh fī ‘ilm al-nikaḥ*, which he begins with what is quite simply a pastiche in rhymed prose of the traditional Friday sermon. Here are a few significant lines from his prelude:

Laud to the Lord who adorned the virginal bosom with breasts, and who made the thighs of women anvils for the spear handles of men. Whose lance point devised for attack of clefts and not of throats. Who made the active worker cushioned coynte to correspond with nice fit and perfect measure all the space that lies betwixt the still unstormed-breath, and the maiden-head unreached.

### 3.6 Chastity (*‘iffah*) between *‘udhrī* and Islamic discourse

While permissible sexual relationships are described in Islamic sources as great wells of love and closeness for the couple involved, prohibitions against adulterous relationships are equally strong. Adultery is strictly and repeatedly forbidden in the Qur'an.

---

53 Al-Ddūkhkhan (44:54).
54 Al-Waqlī’ah (56:17-23).
55 The Muslim attribution of this worldly voluptuousness to the other world (*The akhirah*) provoked an uncharacteristically violent outburst from the Jewish *mutakalim* Moses Maimonides. About a century after Maimonides, a text known as *The Travels of Sir John Mandeville* – while actually praising many Muslim beliefs and institutions – describes the Islamic notion of paradise with an unmistakable hint of derision. For more details see Maghen, pp.6-7.
It could be argued that the concept of ‘iffah chastity, as it appears in the Qur’an and sunnah, is rather strict. Here are some relevant quotations:

‘Nor come nigh to adultery: for it is a shameful (deed) and an evil, opening the road (to other evils)’ 57.

‘The woman and the man guilty of adultery or fornication,- flog each of them with a hundred stripes: Let not compassion move you in their case, in a matter prescribed by Allah, if ye believe in Allah and the Last Day: and let a party of the Believers witness their punishment’ 58.

‘Let those who find not the wherewithal for marriage keep themselves chaste, until Allah gives them means out of His grace. And if any of your slaves ask for a deed in writing (to enable them to earn their freedom for a certain sum), give them such a deed if ye know any good in them: yea, give them something yourselves out of the means which Allah has given to you. But force not your maids to prostitution when they desire chastity, in order that ye may make a gain in the goods of this life. But if anyone compels them, yet, after such compulsion, is Allah, Oft-Forgiving, Most Merciful (to them)’ 59.

‘The believers must (eventually) win through. Those who humble themselves in their prayers; Who avoid vain talk; Who are active in deeds of charity; Who abstain from sex, Except with those joined to them in the marriage bond, or (the captives) whom their right hands possess, for (in their case) they are free from blame, But those whose desires exceed those limits are transgressors’ 60.

The story of the prophet Joseph and the wife of the governor of Egypt in the Qur’an shows the prophet’s high level of chastity and virtue:

‘The woman whose house it was solicited him. She barred the doors and said: (come over here). He said: (Allah is my refuge! He is my lord and has been good to me with where I live. Those who do wrong will surely not succeed)’ 61.

57 Al-Isra’ (17:32).
56 Al-Nur (24:2). While harsh, modern commentators are often quick to note that the punishment prescribed for adultery is mitigated by the impracticality of meeting its requirement for being applied: the testimonies of four eye-witnesses to the act (24:13). Many today consider this to mean it is an almost purely symbolic way of denoting the severity of the offence, while others consider it a legally required punishment.
59 Al-Nur (24:33).
60 Al-Mu’minin (23:1-7).
61 Yusuf (12:23).

82
‘He said: (My Lord, the prison is preferable to me than what they call on me to do. Unless you turn their guile away from me, it may will be that I will fall for them) But she in whose house he was, sought to seduce him from his (true) self: she fastened the doors, and said: "Now come, thou (dear one)!" He said: "(Allah) forbid! truly (thy husband) is my lord! he made my sojourn agreeable! truly to no good come those who do wrong!”’62.

Therefore, any extramarital sexual intercourse, by persons married or unmarried, is punishable and constitutes the offense of zina. In the case of unmarried offenders, the punishment is one hundred lashes, while for married offenders it is being stoned to death. However, in general terms, the shari‘ah doctrine formulates very strict and rigid specifications for the legal evidence required, without which no punishment can be applied.

In the sunnah one finds many examples of the strict prohibition of immoral sexuality. Here are some examples from Ṣâhiḥ al-Bukhārī:

Narrated ‘Abdullah bin ‘Umar: ‘The Jew brought to the Prophet a man and a woman from amongst them who have committed (adultery) illegal sexual intercourse. He ordered both of them to be stoned (to death), near the place of offering the funeral prayers beside the mosque’63.

Narrated Ibn ‘Abbas: I have not seen a thing resembling ‘lamam’ (minor sins) than what Abu Hurayra ‘narrated from the Prophet who said: ‘Allah has written for Adam's son his share of adultery which he commits inevitably. The adultery of the eyes is the sight (to gaze at a forbidden thing), the adultery of the tongue is the talk, and the inner self wishes and desires and the private parts testify all this or deny it’64.

Looking at this sort of ḥadīth, al-Ghazālī compares the gaze to a poisonous arrow and stresses its sinful implications, justifying the Islamic law's condemnation of

---

62 Yusuf (12:33).
64 Ibid., Volume 8, Book 74, Number 260.
gazing as a sin when it is coupled with desire. However, there is no contradiction between the positive attitude towards sexuality and the strict code of chastity in Islamic discourse. If we understand the context, we will see that there is room for both. 'An emphasis on modesty does not necessarily go hand in hand with repressed sexuality or a negative attitude to physical intimacy...the two tendencies tend to complement one another.' The combination of passion and purity, between the houris who are described as 'long to cohabit with their husbands' and the same houris who are also described as 'pure and undefiled...whom no man or jinn has touched', is a reconciliation between modesty and carnality that achieved its balance in this Islamic ideal.

Maghen states that:

> Vibrant sexuality and elaborate legalism are, at first glance, strange bedfellows. The former is characterised by the shedding of inhibitions and the loss of control; the latter seeks to instill inhibitions and exert control...The jurisprudential component was thoroughly unharnpered, and early on managed to spawn a plethora of intricate provisions concerning the ritual effects of divers sexual situations. Passion, for its part...managed to remain lucid and liberated...The text in which we read about these matters are themselves a symptom of, and a metaphor for, such comfortable coexistence.

On the other hand, an examination of the concept of chastity 'iffah as it appears in 'udhri tradition suggests a different definition from that which appears in the Qur'an and sunnah. As discussed in the first chapter, the 'udhri poets lived during the Umayyad period; but the 'udhri tradition was crystallized later on when the collections of 'udhri poetry were gathered, and when the books about the lovers among Arabs “’ushshaq al-’Arab” were produced. Although these books are devoted mainly to 'udhri love, they are not actually confined to the poets’ stories, as

66 Maghen, p. 112.
narratives about other lovers from different periods are also included. As Jacobi explains:

In a more realistic strand, ‘udhri’ love is not so much an emotion or state of mind, but a code of behavior among lovers. It can be associated with the literary and social ideal of (zari) refinement, described in detail by al-Washsha‘(d. 325/936) in his kitāb al-Muashsha’ 69.

By examining the ‘udhri’ poetry and the narratives that appear in al-Muashsha and many other collections of love stories, which all stress the chastity of the lovers, one will find a special concept of chastity that is not necessarily purely Islamic. On a poetic level, the desire to obtain the object of love is expressed repeatedly. Certain characteristic terminology strikes the reader of ‘udhri’ poetry, such as thirst, nights, touch, saliva, beds, longing, kissing, embrace, appointments, and so on. It is irrelevant whether this desire has been satisfied or not as that question belongs to the historical contexts, which is not our concern here. Rather, we are examining the literary context. The poets’ expression of their desire and longing for physical contact with the beloved is extreme. For example: Jamīl wishes he could spend one night with Buthaynah, talking and kissing:

Ah me! Shall we ever spend another night like our night until we see the rising of the dawn;
She showering her words upon me,
and oft times showering her saliva upon me from her mouth? 70.

In other verses he shows his readiness to fight Buthaynah’s people who were angry when he spent the night with her.

And I can never forget her family when they came with their swords and surrounded us and said:
Jamīl has spent the night with her in the camp.
And they unsheathed their swords and stood there.
But in the house was I the forest lion,

70 Jamīl, p.38.
and were it not for fear for the soul of Juml [Buthaynah] and fear of God they would have been given bloody noses. 

He always expresses his longing for his beloved's kisses:

Do you not know –
You who have sweet saliva –
That I shall remain thirsty
Until I have tasted your sweet?

He tells Buthaynah:
And if a skin that is not yours
touched me
under my garments
I will get rash!

Moreover, he wishes:

O I wish (though wishes are not enough)
that I had met with her after the watchmen were asleep.
How welcome you are as a shawl for a cold lad to make his garment
when he fears the chill and the cold.

Such verses and allusions to physicality between the two lovers incited a contemporary scholar to suggest that the marriage union had actually taken place in Jamīl’s story; Faṭmah Tajwar in her study *al-Mar’ah fi al-shi’r al-Umawi* argues that Jamīl’s sensual verses -- like the ones quoted above -- suggest a marital bond between him and Buthaynah. She, for example, cites the verse where the two lovers ask someone from their families to judge and resolve the disagreement between them. Tajwar wonders: ‘If the relationship was not public, as in a marital form, would Buthaynah have asked a member of her family to sit in judgment? [she would have been too ashamed to ask a relative if the relationship had not been a marital

---

72 Jamil, p. 107. See also p. 24. Yet some contemporary scholars, such as Fayṣal, warn us not to have any ill-thoughts about this verse. Fayṣal, p. 287.
one]. Would it have been acceptable for a female to make such a request had it only been an affair?75

However, in my view, the sensual allusions in Jamīl’s love poetry do not necessarily indicate his marital union with Buthaynah. We may rather see them in the light of desire that the poet expressed towards his beloved. Moreover, such allusions are not confined to Jamīl, as all the ‘udhri poets express similar wishes, so were they all engaged in a marital union with their beloved? Majnūn, for instance, depicts his longing for Laylā using several images:

I see Laylā’s slip and I envy it - the slip, for what it contains, is the object of my envy76

A similar image is found in ‘Urwah’s poem:

I wished, out of my passion for ‘Afrā’, that I was her Yemeni slip under her chemise77

Qays draws a link between his longing for Lubnā and the prophet Idrīs longing for paradise:

I long for the perfume of her bosom
Just as [Prophet] Idrīs longed for Paradise78

The longing for the beloved to quench the poet’s thirst involves poetic images such as thirsty birds and the thirsty fasting person79. Qays’ verses elaborating on his longing for Lubnā are worth examining here:

See the parched birds which circle round the water night and day, but for fear of being beaten never drink their fill or come close to the cool ponds
They see the froth of the water and death together and are attentive to the voices of the water bearers

76 Majnūn, p.71.
77 ‘Urwah, p. 51.
78 Qays, p. 124.
79 Majnūn, pp. 170, 182.
They are no more afflicted than I am
with the heat of longing and ardour
but the enemy has hindered me.

The birds represent the poet himself or the external equivalent of his desire. These verses contain remarkable terms as they picture the interplay between two contrasting forces: the motivating force (towards water, life and woman) and the force of the resisting obstacle. The birds' persistence in gazing at water that is inaccessible is a metaphor of the poet's persistence in trying to reach the object of his desire, the woman. ‘The voices of the water bearers’ evokes the sense of deprivation felt by the birds and by their emotional counterpart, the poet. For the poet to reach the life-giving water, he must, paradoxically, cross the terrifying bridge of death.

Majnūn states that his remedy is to embrace his beloved. He longs for her to the extent that he wishes to be part of her clothes. One will notice the use of terms such as ‘privacy at night’ and ‘bedfellow’. Qays describes Lubna saying:

O most perfect of people from head to toe,
and most beautiful of people clothed or unclothed
Oh how wonderful you are as a bedfellow just after sleep
as I pull you towards me full of sleep and wakefulness!

The ‘udhrī’ concept of love clearly involves the concept of bodily desire. Majnūn addresses Layla:

Ah me! Shall I ever spend a night
where my beloved sleeps comfortably?

Yet, contemporary scholars like Ghunaymī Hilāl compare the perspective of ‘udhrī poets to that of chaste religious people, like the prophet Joseph who resisted being

---

80 Qays, p. 155. Qays used the word ‘ha’ima’, which can mean either birds or camels. However, I chose to interpret it as birds.
81 Majnūn p. 163.
82 Ibid., p. 76
83 Qays, p. 109.
84 Majnun, p. 140.
seduced by the governor of Egypt’s wife. However, those ‘udhri songs about the craving for physical contact with the beloved are, one could argue, far away from the strict concept of chastity as articulated in Joseph’s attitude. He prefers to be jailed rather than succumb to the desire of the seductress.

On a narrative level, there are several accounts that imply physical contact between ‘udhri lovers, some which have already been mentioned. In one account, for instance, Jamil visited Buthaynah in secret and she hid him for three nights in her home. In any case, it seems that a specific concept of chastity emerged later on in the corpus written about love in general and ‘udhri love in particular. This concept divides the body of a woman into the upper and lower parts. The lover should attain the pleasures of love by captivating the upper part of his beloved, not the lower.

These traditions in love were crystallised later in the ninth and tenth centuries when the books that were concerned with courtly love, and which set the norms for lovers, appeared. Although the tales are set mainly in cities and courts, and the lovers were usually much more refined than the earlier Bedouins, these stories are full of echoes from the early Bedouin lovers, especially ‘udhri. Their stories were polished and reproduced in the form of courtly love. The book al-Muashsha is a good example of this genre. Washsha’, the author, ‘sets forth what the cultivated man, the zari or the adib should know (...) This Zarf adab ideal sets standards for good manners and decent behaviour in courtship. An integral part of these codes are the

---

86 See more examples about Jamil’s and Buthaynah’s relationship in al-İsfahani, vol. 8, pp. 300, 304, 305.
87 I am referring particularly to Moṣari‘ al-‘ushshaq, Rawdat al-muhibbin, Tawq al-ḥamāmah, and al-Muwashsha.
concepts of idealised and chaste ‘udhri‘ love⁸⁸. Within this concept of chaste love the author of al-Muashsha writes:

To love is to kiss, to touch hand or arm, or to send letters whose spells are stronger than witchcraft. Love is nothing but this: when lovers sleep together, love perishes. The unchaste are only interested in having children⁸⁹.

Likewise, in his treatise on love, where ‘he deals with ‘ishq as a universal principle’⁹⁰, Ibn Sīnā states:

If the purpose of kissing and embracing is to get close to and become one with the lover, these actions are not shunned because one desires to acquire his beloved by touching after gazing at her. Thus, the lover desires to embrace and kiss his beloved. However, if embracing and kissing are followed by sexual intercourse, they are to be refrained from⁹¹.

Interestingly, this special understanding of ‘iffah appears even in the books written by famous jurists “fuqha” like Ibn Qayyim al-Jawziyyah. In his Rawḍat al-muḥbbīn, he states that:

They (the jurists) have made a kiss permissible for one who otherwise fears death saying that not to do so might lead to death, a kiss being a small thing compared to death which is a great thing. When someone becomes ill with two diseases the most serious illness is treated first and there is no danger greater than death. They have even made it mandatory for the beloved to accede to such a thing if it is known that it might otherwise lead to death⁹².

Ibn Qayyim al-Jawziyyah also provides several related anecdotes which show that for someone truly in love, to kiss or embrace is semi-legal, or at least only the kind of minor sin called lamam,:

Abū al-Hasan al-Madā‘īnī said: ‘A Muslim once fell in love with a girl in Mecca and desired her but she refused so he said in the words of ‘Aṭā‘ b. Abī Ribaḥ the jurist: ‘I asked the Meccan jurist whether there was any sin in the embrace and kiss of one of whose heart

---

⁸⁹ Washsha‘, p. 209.
⁹⁰ Giffen, p. 146.
⁹² Ibn Qayyim al-Jawziyyah, pp. 129-130.
yearned’. He said: ‘God forbid that piety should be taken away by an embrace between two wounded hearts’. She said: ‘By God, you asked about ‘Atā’ that and he said you can do this?’ He said: ‘Yes, by God’. So she visited him and said: ‘Woe betide you that you go beyond the ruling of ‘Atā’!’

It seems that support from jurists for the lovers to reach a certain point in their physical union is forthcoming:

Al-Zubayr b. Bakkar related from ‘Abd al-Malik b. ‘Abd al-‘Aziz who said: ‘Muhammad b. al-Munkadir recited the saying of Waďdah al-Yemen:

‘She did not yield until I humbled myself in front of her and made her read what God has made allowable regarding derangement lamam’. Muhammad laughed and said: ‘Waďdah was a jurist in his own right!’

Furthermore, the ‘udhri concept of chastity is clearly declared by a man who was asked: ‘Would you like to have your lover tonight?’ He said: ‘Yes’. He was asked: ‘So what would you do?’ He said: ‘I would obey love by kissing her and disobey Satan by not sinning with her’.

Nevertheless, some theorists draw more flexible boundaries, as does al-Jahiz in Risālat al-Qiyān. Ibn Ḥazm, in his famous eleventh century love treatise, Tawq al-Ḥamamah (The Ring of the Dove) where he expresses puzzlement over why Bedouin tales show the women as being fond of publicity while they have a reputation for chastity:

I have read in some Bedouin tales that their women-folk do not feel satisfied and convinced that a man is really in love with them, until his romantic feelings become public knowledge and are completely divulged; he must advertise and broadcast his attachment, and sing their praises for all to hear. I know not what to make of that, considering they have such a reputation for chastity: what chastity

93 Ibid., p. 329. The same verses appear in Tazyīn al-aswaq, though the Meccan jurist refers to al-Shafi‘i. An interpretation is provided there to the verses: a newly married man asks whether or not he can embrace his wife during Ramadan while he is fasting.

94 Ibid.

95 Ibid. Likewise, Ibn Hazm’s Tawq contains much evidence that stolen glances and even stolen pleasures were fairly common among ‘good’ people. See pp. 183-188 of his book.
does a woman in fact possess, if her greatest desire and joy is to be notorious after this fashion?\textsuperscript{96}

In this passage, Khan notes, a woman ‘is portrayed as allowing her name to be appropriated by a male poet in return for a kind of stardom or renown which in turn confers upon her an aesthetic and erotic value prized in courtship rituals.\textsuperscript{97}

Paradoxically, the ‘\textit{udhri}’ model in love, and its special treatment of the question of physical contact between the lovers, differs from the strict teaching of Islam on the subject. Islamic teaching highlights the preference for marriage, which the ‘\textit{udhri}’ tradition challenges, as will be discussed in the following sections.

3.7 Marriage in the ‘\textit{Udhri}’ Tradition

Despite all the Islamic encouragement of marriage, it seems that the ‘\textit{udhri}’ attitude to it moves in another direction. It is not that the poets fail to express their desire to marry their beloved, but rather, they show the impossibility of its realisation. It seems that the ‘\textit{udhri}’ love tale resists the expected and accepted happy ending, simply because the enactment of it will mean the end of the story itself, and, more dangerously, the end of the poetry. If the poet lover did not suffer, he would not compose poetry\textsuperscript{98}. Therefore, the resistance, on a narrative level, to marriage between the lovers is understandable in this light.

Considering the ‘\textit{udhri}’ corpus, there were, in fact, no real obstacles to marriage between the lovers as they were usually cousins from the same tribe, equal in wealth and social status. In the tale, however, all kinds of difficulty make the

\textsuperscript{96} Ibn Hazm, p. 86.
\textsuperscript{97} Khan, p. 266.
\textsuperscript{98} The link between composing poetry and an unattainable beloved will be discussed in detail in a further chapter.
marriage impossible. Sometimes, the tale claims that the poetry the poet composes about his love prevents him from making his wish come true. Paradoxically, in other contexts, when a poet writes poetry about a woman, her father rewards him. But, in the ‘udhrī context, poetry was considered to be the cause of the lovers’ misery.

Moreover, whenever the story moves towards union between the lovers, new obstacles appear. This factor helps explain why all the offers from noble people to unite the lovers by marriage always fails. For example, the following narrative is told about Majnūn:

Nawfal (ibn Musāhiq) asked him: (Is it love that has brought you to this state?) (Yes) said Majnūn, (and it will bring me to a worse state than this). Nawfal asked: (Would you like me to help you marry her?) (Yes) replied Majnūn, (is there any possibility of that?) Nawfal replied: (Come with me, I will bring you to her and arrange your engagement to her, making you desirable to her people by [paying her father] your marriage gift. (Will you really do it?) asked Majnūn, and Nawfal said: (Yes). Majnūn said: (Mark what you are saying). (I will make it my duty to do this for you), said Nawfal. So Nawfal went off with him, and then sent for some clothes. Majnūn put them on and went with him like the soundest of companions, talking with him and reciting poetry. The news reached Layla’s family; they came to meet them with arms and said to Nawfal: (By God, O son of Musāhiq, we would die before Majnūn enters our house; the Sultan has allowed us to shed his blood with impunity). Nawfal tried his best to persuade them, but they refused. When Nawfal realized that, he told Majnūn to go away. Majnūn said: (By God, you have not kept your word!). Nawfal answered: (Your departure is easier for me than bloodshed). So he [Majnūn] went away.

As can be seen, Nawfal represents authority in this narrative, for he came to collect the alms tax. He met Majnūn, empathised with him and tried to help him marry.

Nevertheless, a higher authority, in the form of the Sultan, was then introduced into the narrative to prevent Nawfal from achieving his aim. The Sultan proceeded to shed Majnūn’s blood with impunity. The narrative shows that by choosing

---

99 He came to the tribe to collect the alms tax.
matrimonial union, Majnūn actually chose death. His own blood stands between him and his beloved\(^{101}\).

The ‘udhrī narratives go beyond preventing lovers from getting married, to even mock the notion of matrimony itself. In all the ‘udhrī stories, the beloved marries a man other than her love. This marriage usually takes place in the first half or middle of the story. Yet, ‘the love relation does not simply fade or disappear after the time of the marriage. On the contrary, it is itself opposed to the matrimonial bond. The tension between the two relationships -- marital and amorous – is, therefore, a crucial factor (in ‘udhrī romance)\(^{102}\). The narratives state that the poet-lover continues to visit his beloved after the marriage, showing no respect for the matrimonial bond. The citation below reveals how Majnūn persists in visiting Laylā after her marriage takes place:

Laylā’s husband and her father departed due to a matter that took the tribe away to Mecca during the night. Then Laylā sent her slave-girl to Majnūn to extend an invitation to him. So he stayed at her place for a night and she made him leave at daybreak, saying to him: Come to me each night as long as the tribe is away. He [regularly] came to her place until they [father and husband] returned. Concerning the last night of their tryst, when she bade him farewell, he recited:

\[
\text{Enjoy Laylā, indeed you are an owl...}
\text{That each day draws nearer to its death.}
\text{Enjoy until the riders return, [for] when they return,}
\text{Forbidden to you is her speech.}\]

Likewise, Jamīl is reported visiting Buthaynah even after her marriage:

\(^{101}\) In Ahmad Shawqi’s treatment of Majnūn legend in his modern poetic play: Majnūn Laylā, he portrays Nawfal trying to help Majnūn by conversing with Laylā’s people, but her people were armed and ready to take Majnūn’s life. They did not listen to Nawfal, and they wanted to marry off Laylā to another man called Ward. Interestingly, Shawqi makes Majnūn’s ghazal for Laylā the chief motivation that persuaded Ward to propose to her. Nevertheless, according to the play, Laylā remained a virgin after her marriage as the Majnūn’s strong presence stood between her and her husband. See: Ahmad Shawqi,  \textit{Majnun Layla} (Cairo: Maktabat Miṣr, 1989). \(^{102}\) Khan, p. 278. \(^{103}\) Al-Isfahani, vol. 2, p. 376, trans. Khan, pp. 303-304.
Jamil used to come to her secretly and then she was married. Thereafter, he used to visit her in her husband’s house clandestinely until Dajajah b. Rib’iy was appointed governor over the Wadi al-Qur. They complained about Jamil to him and he ordered him not to visit her at her home and empowered them to shed his blood with impunity if he resumed visiting her. Respectively, the episodes quoted above, as Khan points out, ‘suggest that the beloved in question voluntarily engages in a consensual bond with her lover. She receives her lover of her own free will even after marriage’.

Moreover, it seems that the ‘udhrī tradition tends to treat ‘husbands’ ironically. Certainly, the husband is, like the beloved herself, a victim of social mores and customs. He proposes to a certain girl to obtain a normal married life, but then he has to face all the difficulties of being married to the beloved of a poet, while the poetry about her spreads far and wide. Yet the narratives do not empathise with him as he is often portrayed as an outsider who separates the lovers. Although he lives in an Islamic society where he is supposed to have power and rights, he actually takes the weakest position in the story. Al-Iṣfahānī states that people in Madīnah were singing Qays’s poetry about Lubnā. So, her husband admonished her. She became so angry with him that she told him: ‘By God, I did not marry you because I wanted you (...). I got married because the Sultan would have shed Qays's blood if he came near my tribe, so I wanted to protect him from being murdered by marrying another man. If you want to do so, set me free. I do not need you’. Her husband, al-Iṣfahānī continues, trying to placate her by inviting singers to sing Qays's poetry to her!

Consequently, the ‘udhrī tradition does not move in favour of marriage in spite of all the virtues that marriage has in Islamic society. The narratives ensure that

---

105 Khan, p. 305.
106 Al-Iṣfahānī, vol. 9, p. 143.
the lovers are kept away from the idea of marriage, and, moreover, if the lovers ever
did get married, the story would be sure to separate them for one reason or another.
The story of Qays and Lubna is typical in this regard. In fact, their love story
commences at the moment of separation, when their desperate longing for each other
begins. At the same time, the beloved always marries another man, not her lover, and
the husband invariably appears as a pathetic and dislikeable character, as mentioned
above.

3.8 Between Platonic and ḍhri‘ love

The term "Platonic love" seems to take on somewhat different shades of meaning
when used in different contexts. Initially, I am citing here two definitions from the
Oxford English Dictionary, both with a number of examples:

1- Of love, affection, or friendship: intimate and affectionate but not sexual;
spiritual rather than physical. Now usually with lower-case initial. 1678 J.
NORRIS Coll. Misc. (1699) 355 Platonic Love is the Love of Beauty
abstracted from all sensual Applications, and desire of Corporal Contact.
1995 Daily Express 17 Mar. 29/2 If you have a physical attraction, who wants
to remain platonic friends?.. But if you get into sex, the friendship goes.
2- Of a person: that feels or professes platonic love; that has a non-sexual
relationship. 1709 R. STEELE Tatler No. 32. 3 This Order of Platonick
Ladies are to be dealt with in a peculiar Manner from all the rest of the Sex.

Thus, the popular understanding of platonic love ‘is a non-sexual affectionate
relationship. A simple example of Platonic relationships is a deep, non-sexual
friendship, not subject to gender pairings and including close relatives.". However,
this interpretation shows a misunderstanding of the true nature of the Platonic ideal
of love which, from its origin, was that of a chaste but strong love, that was believed

to be elevated above sex. In his book about platonic love, Gould argues that Plato assumes love to be the key to civilization, art, justice, and all great, brave acts in the world, while the Christians and Romantics, in different ways, thought that love destroyed society or was an effort to escape from it. Moreover, love is the key to everything important in life. Without it, neither thought nor activity is profitable or possible. Gould adds that platonic love could not find fulfillment solely in physical pleasures.

Several scholars use the term “platonic love” to describe ‘udhrī love. For example, Massignon, in the first edition of the Encyclopedia of Islam, claims that ‘‘udhrī love is related to the platonic love of the Greeks from which it is derived; and Kinany says that ‘udhrī love is a sort of platonic love. Likewise, Von Grunebaum pointed to close parallels between ‘udhrī and Greek love poems and apparently saw the root of ‘udhrī behaviour in a Greek influence.

However, ‘udhrī love as presented in poetry and stories ascribed to or told about ‘udhrī poets is far removed from the concept of platonic love. This idea has not escaped the notice of many scholars who have, in fact, challenged the concept of ‘udhrī love as platonic love. In the new edition of the Encyclopedia of Islam, for example, Renate Jacobi writes: ‘‘udhrī love in the seventh century is neither platonic nor courtly, not even sentimental’. Al-Jawārī, likewise, dedicates numerous pages

108 Ibid.
110 Ibid., p. 47.
111 Ibid., p. 56.
113 Kinany, p. 7.
in his book to making a clear distinction between 'udhrī' love and platonic love. His argument relies on various facts, such as the Arabs being unaware of Greek philosophy when 'udhrī' love appeared among them. Also, 'udhrī' love emerged in the desert among Bedouin, far away from the intellectual influence that was present in towns and cities. Moreover, 'udhrī' love is a poetic expression, while platonic love is a philosophical idea. Likewise, Sulaymān lists various factors that distinguish 'udhrī' love from platonic love. He argues that Platonic love is a means towards creation and creativity. Thus, it is not an end in itself. On the other hand, 'udhrī' love is an end in itself. In platonic love, you must have someone to guide you and show you goodness and beauty. However, you will not realise absolute beauty until you are literally burned with the fire of knowledge, in order to fully appreciate art and to gain wisdom. Nothing of that sort exists in 'udhrī' love. Also, platonic love has a final aim which is God or absolute beauty, whereas 'udhrī' love is all about lovers.

3.9 Conclusion

In this chapter, I have studied the 'udhrī' association with chastity by exploring the concept of chastity in Islamic discourse on the one hand and the representation of this concept in the 'udhrī' tradition on the other. Evidently, the view of chastity as it appears in the Qurʾan and sunnah is rather strict as it establishes a high standard of virtue. Nonetheless, 'udhrī' theory and practice, as crystallised in 'udhrī' poetry and books that have dealt with the 'udhrī' phenomenon, suggest a different view of chastity. It could be argued that this view divides the body of a woman into the upper

---

116 Al-Jawārī, p. 64.
and lower parts. The lover should obtain the pleasures of love by captivating the upper part of his beloved, not the lower. It seems that ‘udhri poets -- according to the ‘udhri corpus -- were distanced from the notion of marriage in direct contrast with the encouragement of marriage that Islam favours. As we have discussed, Islamic discourse around marriage is positive, marriage being highly favoured among Muslims. The Prophet’s hadīths and his personal life are good examples of this view. But, the ‘udhri tradition challenged the possibility of a marital bond between ‘udhri lovers. Even if they were married, like Qays and Lubnā, the narratives would separate them in order to inflame their yearning, which is, after all, the main theme of ‘udhri poetry. Moreover, the poets continued to visit their beloved, in spite of the fact that they were married to other men and the beloved’s husband is always treated unsympathetically, making him appear pathetic and hateful. If the Islamic attitude emphasises the aspect of reproduction as the result of sexual enjoyment, the ‘udhri tradition provides no trace of children. Moreover, the beloved is usually depicted in an ethereal manner with no hint of potential motherhood, as shall be seen in the next chapter.
The Representation of the Beloved’s Body

4.1 Introduction

Studying *al-ghazal al-‘udhri* reveals that the body enjoys a prominent and significant position in it: both that of the beloved and the lover. This chapter will concentrate on the depiction of the beloved’s body. Certainly, focusing on the bodily presence in *‘udhri* poetry does not imply a denial of other intellectual aspects, but the discussion of those aspects is beyond the purpose of this chapter. This is not to say that the intellectual aspects of *‘udhri* poetry will be set aside. In fact, it can be argued that studying the body yields a challenge to the classical distinction in Islamic culture between the body and the soul. This distinction can be found particularly in Sufi discourse, where the flesh is afflicted and thus the subject seeks egress from this world and its material rewards and pleasures. Al-Ghazālī, for example, clearly distinguishes between the body (badan) and the soul (nafs) in his refutation of the philosophers’ statement that it is impossible for human souls to undergo annihilation after having come into existence. According to the Persian mystic Farīd al-Dīn ‘Aṭṭār the body is the soul’s cage; in the hereafter the body will become soul, and one must prepare for it in this world. Ibn al-Nafīs, the doctor and theologian, says:

---

1 In fact, not only in Islamic culture: “this separation between the psyche and the body, and a related rejection and mortification of the latter, lies at the core of Western culture. The roots of such a separation dwell in Plato’s idealism and in the celebration of the spirit in Christianity, which sees the soul as the only link with God, and the body as the dwelling place of vice and evil”. Stefani Michelucci, “D.H.Lawrence’s Representation of the Body and the Visual Arts”, in *Writing the Body in D.H.Lawrence: Essays on Language, Representation, and Sexuality*, ed. Paul Poplawski (London: Greenwood Press, 2001), p. 19.


'Man is composed of body and soul: the body is this thing which can be perceived, but the soul is that to which one refers when one says: “I”'\textsuperscript{4}.

However, salient aspects of the religious system, as Maghen argues, limited the extent and effect of Sufi preaching that separated and subordinated the body. One of these factors was the pervasive Islamic outlook reflected in Quranic statements such as: ‘O you who believe! Do not prohibit the good things which God has permitted you’\textsuperscript{5}. Another factor was the blatantly sensual nature of paradise, and the third was \textit{tahārah}, the deeply-entrenched and omnipresent Islamic code of ritual purity\textsuperscript{6}.

The symbolic body will receive discussion in a chapter to follow, chapter\textsuperscript{4}. In this chapter I will focus only on the depiction of the body of the beloved. I will begin by examining the images used to portray female beauty in \textit{al-ghazal al-’udhri}, with the link between this portrayal and the conventional pattern of female beauty as suggested throughout (other) classical Arabic poetry. Next, I will look at the question of the stereotypical image of female beauty in both Arabic poetry and Persian paintings; hence, I will provide a comparison between Laylā’s physical portrayal in Majnūn’s poetry and later Persian painting. This will lead me to investigate the stereotypical image of the desirable woman in classical Arabic literature in general, and in \textit{al-ghazal al-’udhri} in particular: the image of a corpulent woman. Thus I intend to discuss this desirable image of a woman in light of its origins in ancient Arab culture. Although \textit{al-ghazal al-’udhri} makes use of tropes and metaphors that were inherited from the pre-Islamic period, nevertheless it moves away from the old tradition by emphasizing the ethereal aspect of female beauty. Therefore, I will look

\textsuperscript{4} Ibid.
\textsuperscript{5} Al-Ma’\textsuperscript{idah (5:87).
\textsuperscript{6} Maghen, pp. 4-7.
at the notion of sublimated beauty in *al-ghazal al-ʿudhri* and its link with the notion of time, eternal beauty, and love. I will end by examining the theme of the beauty of the beloved which leads to the death of the lover.

I have selected verses of poetry on the criteria of both internal evidence in the poetry itself and external evidence from the *akhbār* (historical anecdotes) that accompany the poems in the classical ʿudhri corpus. The goal here is not to offer a comprehensive account of the ways in which *al-ghazal al-ʿudhri* refers to the body, but rather, to examine in some detail a selection of texts in which the body is manifestly represented. It should be clear that the concern here is not the real historical figure of Laylā or Lubnā, but their literary representation.

### 4.2 The Conventional Pattern of Female Beauty, with Special Reference to Pre-Islamic Literature

The importance of the body in classical Arabic literary discourse is undoubted. Common themes found in this discourse include such topics as sexuality and eroticism, feminine ideal, the concept of virility, and so on. As special literature developed around describing female beauty, in particular:

Human beauty was a major topic in Arabic aesthetic discourse, and the only subject besides calligraphy of which aesthetic canons were compiled. A special literature deals with female beauty, describing in detail its types, forms, colours, and proportions, and setting criteria for perfection. It also includes a discussion of the tastes and predilections of religious and historic persons for certain women. A large variety of terms were used to describe types of female beauty and grades of beauty and sex appeal.

---

7 This literature includes many motifs. For example, for feminine ideal motifs such as how to examine a *jāriyah* (female slave) are found. The concept of virility includes motifs such as medicine that promotes virility.

Therefore, this literature governed the conventional desirable elements of female beauty, and defined it within certain parameters. The general criteria of beauty remain almost the same in both the pre-Islamic and early Islamic periods. The later depiction of this beauty was derived from the inherited depiction that materialised in pre-Islamic literature.

Figurative language associated with female beauty involves metaphors based upon deer, oryx, doe, ivory, silver, pure water, sand dunes, grapes, wine, sun, moon, and so on. It is significant, however, that these metaphorical possibilities are not limited to poetry. In fact, one of the oldest passages describing the female body -- attributed to the pre-Islamic period-- appeared in prose form. This passage is attributed to a woman, who was sent to observe another woman’s body in order to describe it to the king of the *Kindah* tribe, ‘Amr b. Ḥiṣr, the grandfather of the famous poet Imru’ al-Qays. The king wanted to marry the daughter of ‘Awf b. Miḥlam al-Shaybānī. ‘Awf's daughter was called Umm-Iyās, a brilliant and very beautiful girl. ‘Amr b. Ḥiṣr sent a clever woman called ‘Īṣām to observe Umm-Iyās so that she could describe her to him and report whether what he had heard about her beauty was accurate or not. Hence, ‘Īṣām went there and saw Umm-Iyās, then went back to the King and described what she had seen. Her discourse recorded the criteria for female beauty. I am quoting ‘Īṣām’s description of Umm-Iyās at length in order to show how significant and comprehensive this text is in terms of representing female beauty:

Umm-Iyās's forehead is as clear and beautiful as a gleaming mirror covered with completely dark hair just like that of a braided horse tail; her black tresses appear like chains, and when she combs them, they look like clusters of grape washed by heavy rain. Moreover, her eyebrows are very well-designed as if they were drawn by a pen, and dark as if they were coloured by carbon. They are curved around her beautiful eyes which look like the eyes of a beautiful bird. Umm-Iyās's
nose which is neither long nor short is as sharp as the blade of a beautiful polished sword. Furthermore, her cheeks are a purplish colour and snow-white as pearls. She has a wonderful small mouth with a charming smile, cheerful prominent white incisors and pearl-like teeth; in addition, her saliva smells like wine and tastes like honey; let alone, her lips which are red like flowers. She is eloquent, clever and quick-witted and she has a beautiful neck which is like a silver made jug. She has fleshy arms which make you think that they are boneless and have no veins; additionally, she has soft hands and her breasts are just like two pomegranates. Besides, her abdomen is neither fat nor thin and is rolled up like folded compacted cobatti. She also has a navel like a shining piece of ivory that is used for painting. Further, her back is like a stream of water which ends at a fascinating waist. Beneath it there are rumps which force her to sit when she tries to get up, and make her look as if she is standing when she sits. Her rumps are like a little heap of soil matted by drizzle and they are carried by rounded thighs which look like tiered palm pith, and the thighs are carried by fleshy shanks with dark hair. All these parts are carried by two arrowheads like small feet. May God bless them, how can they tolerate all of that weight? Finally, I do not want to describe the rest of it; however, it is more beautiful than any description—whether in prose or in poetry.

Consequently, ‘Amr b. Ḥijr proposed to Umm-Iyās immediately.

This precise description of the female body is almost the same description that we encounter in the poets’ portrayal of their beloveds. This woman, Umm-Iyās, has certain elements of beauty that Imru’ al-Qays’s Faṭimah has, or al-A’shā’s Hurayrah has, and so on. The description begins from top to toe, from what is seen and known (such as the face) to what is unseen (such as the private parts). The woman who describes the body draws a parallel between it and certain natural elements. Her report goes much further than mere observation and is enhanced by her claims about the sweet taste of Umm-Iyās’s saliva. Therefore, ‘Īsām is seeing Umm-Iyās with masculine eyes, rather than with her own, through her detailed description of Umm-Iyās’s physical beauty. Her description indicates the

---

9 Arabic plural noun of clothes made of linen Egypt.
10 She means Umm-Iyās’s pudenda.
overwhelming influence of the prevailing discourse at that time on the classical
Arabic culture\textsuperscript{12}.

In the light of this, one can understand the power that the desirable image of the female body has over literary expression. The following verses from pre-Islamic poetry present the authoritative image of an attractive woman:

She shows you when you enter privily with her
And she is secure from the eyes of the hateful foemen(…)  
A soft breast like a casket of ivory  
Chastely guarded from adventurous fingers,  
The flanks of a lithe, long, tender body,  
Buttocks oppressed by their ponderous cargo\textsuperscript{13} \[2\]

As we can see, these classical verses reflect the dominant concepts of female beauty. The breast shines like 'ivory', the body is 'tender', buttocks 'oppressed by their ponderous cargo', etc. In Imru’ al-Qays’s \textit{Mu’allaqah} similar elements appear in depicting his woman:

I twisted her side-tresses to me, and she leaned over me;  
Slender- waisted she was, and tenderly plump her ankles,  
Shapely and taut her belly, white-fleshed, not the least flabby,  
Polished the lie of her breast bones, smooth as a burnished mirror…  
She turns away, to show a soft cheek, and wards me off  
With the glance of a wild deer of \textit{Wajra}, a shy gazelle with its fawn;  
She shows me a throat like the throat of an antelope  
not ungainly when she lifts it upwards, neither naked of ornament \textsuperscript{14} \[3\]

Once again, the whiteness of the skin, softness of the body, slenderness of waist, and a general resemblance to deer and antelope are emphasised. ‘The names vary but it is, from top to toe, always the same woman: all pampered softness, languor,

\textsuperscript{12} Fari\dd al-Za\hati, \textit{al-Jasad wa al-surah wa al-muqaddas fi al-Islam} (Beirut: Ifriqiya al-sharq, 1999), p. 75.


plenitude\textsuperscript{15}. Moving to the early Islamic period, \textit{nasi\textbar b}\textsuperscript{16} celebrates the same image of a desirable woman:

\begin{quote}
On the morning of departure
when her tribe set out
Su\textsuperscript{`}ad was but a bleating antelope
with languid gaze and kohl-lined eye…
When she smiles she flashes
side teeth wet
as if with a first draught of wine
or with a second,
mixed with cool water from a wadi’s bend…\textsuperscript{17}
\end{quote}

So, it is not an individual--whether she be Su\textsuperscript{`}ad or F\textsuperscript{a}timah or ‘Ablah—who emerges, but rather it is the perfect image of a beautiful woman that we see. These previously cited verses and many others indicate that the ‘[poem] has less to do perhaps with the poet’s experience than with the audience’s expectations\textsuperscript{18}, as it provides the stereotype of female beauty, and establishes a poetic figurative language to represent it.

Moving to \textit{al-ghazal al-‘udhri}, some motifs in the poem are developed in various aspects beyond what they were in the poems mentioned. Before the Umayyad age, \textit{nasi\textbar b} used to be the prelude, or the opening section of every poem. Poets would begin their poems by expressing their longing for a woman, describing her beauty, and crying at her campsite ruin. Then, the poems would move onto different themes such as eulogies and satire. However, in the Umayyad age love poetry (\textit{ghazal}) emerges as an independent genre among \textit{‘udhri} and other poets who dedicated their poetry to love, such as ‘Umar b. Abi\textsuperscript{`} Rab\textsuperscript{`}ah. Therefore, in the \textit{‘udhri}

\textsuperscript{15} Andras Hamori, “Love Poetry (Ghazal)”, p. 204.
\textsuperscript{16} It is crucial to distinguish between \textit{Nasib} and \textit{Ghazal}. \textit{Nasib} is the lyrical-elegiac opening section of the \textit{qasidah}, while \textit{ghazal} is independent love poetry.
\textsuperscript{18} Hamori, “Love Poetry (Ghazal)”, p. 204.
tradition ghazal is not just the opening section of a poem (qasīdah. nasīb) any more, but it becomes an independent qasīdah itself, and the entire poem addresses the theme of love. Apart from Kuthayyir who was often with the caliph and composed praise poems to him, ‘udhri poets also limited their poetry to the theme of love, and they never composed eulogies. Furthermore, their intentions differed from the previous poets’ intentions; their motives for composing love poetry were not just aesthetic but also psychological or emotional\(^{19}\).

‘Udhri poets add several elements to the ghazal. These elements include themes such as devotion in love. They abandon the motif of halting at the campsite ruin. They also include the use of simple language and their dedication to only one subject instead of many\(^ {20}\). Nonetheless, when it comes to depicting the beloved’s beauty these poets adopted a similar image to what had been established since the pre-Islamic nasīb. Therefore, the physical descriptions of Laylā, Lubnā, Buthaynah, ‘Afrā’, and ‘Azzah, are very much the same as the description of Fatīmah and ‘Ablah from the Mu’llaqāt. It is always the same features which are stressed: tallness, whiteness, big eyes, long neck, ample bosom, slender waist, heavy hips, and plump legs. ‘There are a multitude of such poetic descriptions, differing little in content, the pre-Islamic pattern having been for centuries copied without much variation’\(^ {21}\). The following section will discuss in detail the depiction of the beloved’s body in al-ghazal al-‘udhri and will illustrate how this depiction resembles the old poetic norms. However, the following discussion will also show that there is an attempt by ‘udhrī poets to distinguish themselves from the previous poets by

\(^{19}\) Sabrah, p. 209.
\(^{20}\) Except for a few examples, especially with Kuthayyir.
\(^{21}\) Behrens-Abouseif, p. 57.
stressing the ethereal nature of their beloved’s beauty. This phenomenon gives *al-ghazal al-‘udhri* its own distinctive nature among other classical *ghazal* in spite of their similar depictions of the female body.

4.3 Corporeal Representation: The Physical Description of the Beloved’s Body

By its focus on corporeal representation, the ‘*udhri* poem celebrates the beloved’s beauty in all its glory as will be described in detail. Thus, the reader of ‘*udhri* poetry will encounter a plethora of detailed description about the beloved’s desirable body. This section will further examine this motif through highlighting several aspects of the beloved’s beauty, as shown in ‘*udhri* poetry, e.g. her glow, face, scent and figure. It will also explore the metaphoric image of the beloved as ‘gazelle’ along with its mythic associations.

4.3.1 The Glow of the Beloved

The verses of Majnūn, Qays, Jamīl, and Kuthayyir depict the beloved as a resplendent beauty with a white, unblemished face like the full moon. This face is not only dazzling like the moon; moreover, and more frequently, it is bright like the sun. On the one hand, the beloved’s resplendence resembles the moon or the sun, on the other hand, the moon and sun themselves are incapable of emulating her brilliant light. She makes them feel shy in her presence. Majnūn declares:

I was poured a drink by a sun whose light put the full moon to shame and who outshone the lightning when it flashes

Yet, the fullest moon would be eclipsed by the light of her presence. In comparison with the pre-Islamic poetry, the theme of the woman’s glow and her resemblance to

---

23 Qays, p. 81, Majnūn, p. 77.
24 Majnūn, p. 160.
objects such as a beacon, a lamp, and the sun often appears in the pre-Islamic ghazal. For example, when Imru’ al-Qays describes his beloved’s face he says:

In the evening she lights up the darkness
As though she were the light in the place
Where the hermit does his eventide devotions

However, the ‘udhrī poets do not simply link the pure hue of their beloveds’ faces with the light of sun as Tarafah, for instance, does in his mu’allaqah. ‘Udhri poets go further in the comparison between the beloved and the sun. Kuthayyir even places ‘Azzah in a situation of going to court, so that the judge Muwaffaq should state who is the more beautiful: ‘Azzah or the sun?29

The comparison between Layla’s beauty:

Illuminate the world instead of the moon when it declines,
and play the role of the sun whenever the dawn is late,
because you have the radiance of the sun,
and the sun does not have your beautiful mouth
and your charming smile,
You have the sparkling moonlight
but moon does not have your gorgeous breasts,
and your attractive upper chest,
The shining sun in the forenoon
can neither have apathetic eyes darkened with kohl,
nor Layla’s special charming characteristics,
The sun cannot also appear like Layla,
who looks like a frightened oryx,

25 Majnun, p. 115.
26 Al-Hufi, p. 42.
28 Tarafah’s verse reads: A face as though the sun had loosed his mantle upon it, pure of hue, with not a wrinkle to mar it. (trans. A.J. Arberry, The Seven Odes, p. 83).
29 Kuthayyir, p. 153.
30 It is significant that, afterwards, the theme of the sun and the moon feeling shy in the presence of a beautiful woman becomes a frequent theme in Arabic literature. For example, al-Sahib (d. 385/969) says: ‘He almost put the morning sun to shame’ (in al-Tha’alibi, Yatimat al-dahr, p. 284). See more examples in al-Muhibbi’s Nafh al-riḥānah, pp. 190, 300, and in al-‘Imad al-İsfahani’s Khudrat al-qasr, p. 107. All the references are from www.alwaraq.net, 5 June 2007. Moreover, we can find this theme, later on, in other Eastern poetry, like the one written by Rahman Baba, the Pukhtuns’ poet. For instance, one of his verses reads: ‘At dawn the moon feels ashamed before your face, and must live in the pitch-dark’. Rahman Baba, The Poetry of Rahman Baba: Poet of the Pukhtuns, trans. Robert Sampson and Momin Khan (Peshawar: University Book Agency, 2005), p. 141.
when she bows because of her coquetry\textsuperscript{31}

Using the words “moon”, “dawn”, “sun” (\textit{badr, fajr, shams}) reveals a tendency to abstract the beloved from her physical attributes by making her resemble ephemeral elements such as light. The eyes of the lover see the beloved with a shining face where eyes are filled with light to the extent that these eyes are more glittering and shining than sunlight itself. Thus, the body of the beloved is not perceived as concrete like other elements in life, but as glittering and soft as light. Majnūn states:

They said: where does she live?  
Who is she?  
I said: she is the sun, sky is her home\textsuperscript{32}

Sun is a source of life on earth. Majnūn realizes the power of the sun, and its high state. No one can reach it, while it can reach every thing on earth. Therefore, depicting Laylá as the sun is a theme repeated in many verses composed by Majnūn:

I say to my companions:  
“She is the sun - her light is close but she is too distant to touch”\textsuperscript{33}

\textquote{Ali al-Batâl argues that the resemblance between the sun and woman in classical Arabic poetry has its roots in ancient Arab mythology. The sun was one of the gods that used to be worshipped by the ancient Arabs. They ascribed characteristics of motherhood to the sun, conceiving it as the Mother god, which is why the sun is referred to as being female. Therefore, a woman described as a sun in Arabic poetry is evidence of this link\textsuperscript{34}. However, in Islamic poetry these religious images transferred to artistic models, so the sun-woman metaphor was removed from its ancient mythic setting to a new rational setting, where the sun is not the Mother god

\textsuperscript{31} Majnūn, pp. 91-92.
\textsuperscript{32} Majnun, p. 21.
\textsuperscript{33} Majnun, p. 67.
that gives life, but resembles the woman in her aloofness and light\textsuperscript{35}. This can be seen clearly, when Majnūn says to his friends that she (Layla) is the sun; her light is visible while her actual figure is not palpable\textsuperscript{36}.

It is clear, though, that this insistence on the beloved’s light complexion is meant to reflect her interior serenity. Jamīl compares Buthaynah’s luminescence with the light that illuminates every thing around her\textsuperscript{37}. The lucent face could indicate one’s inner peacefllness. The tradition that demonstrates that a beautiful believer is the utmost perfection and an ugly unbeliever is utmost ugliness\textsuperscript{38}, or the one saying that beautiful people are auspicious\textsuperscript{39}, should not escape our notice here.

4.3.2 The Beloved and the Gazelle Metaphor

The beloved’s eyes radiate darts and wound the heart, not the skin\textsuperscript{40}. Beautiful eyes are described as big and black with brilliant whites, \textit{hawra} and \textit{najla}\textsuperscript{41}. Qays refers to these eyes as drowsy and says they pose a possible threat to his own life:

\begin{quote}
Proclaim for my blood, if I die

From a maiden who has languid and drowsy eyes\textsuperscript{42}
\end{quote}

Nevertheless, the most significant fact about the depiction of the beloved’s eyes is their resemblance to those of a deer and doe\textsuperscript{43}. Majnūn states that Layla’s eyes, while gazing at him, are more beautiful than a deer’s black doting eyes whilst looking after

\textsuperscript{35} Ibid., p. 109.
\textsuperscript{36} Majnun, p. 67
\textsuperscript{37} Jamil, p. 111.
\textsuperscript{39} Ibid., p. 117.
\textsuperscript{40} Jamil, p. 23
\textsuperscript{41} Kuthayyir, p. 181, Jamil, p. 38.
\textsuperscript{42} Qays, p. 46.
\textsuperscript{43} There are various terms referring to the deer in \textit{al-ghazal al-‘udhri}. According to Badwī, these terms are: \textit{ghazal}, \textit{shadin}, \textit{tafl}, \textit{jidayah}, \textit{rasha‘}, \textit{khasht}, \textit{ṭila}, \textit{aghann}, \textit{rūshi}, \textit{adma‘}, \textit{rim}, \textit{khadhul}, and \textit{zabyah}.

its fawn. Jamīl, likewise, sometimes describes Buthaynah’s eyes as white antelope’s eyes, and as brocket’s eyes on other occasions.

In fact, the comparison of the beloved with a gazelle is one of the major topoi of classical Arabic love poetry. In his long description of the beauty of his beloved, Imru’ al-Qays uses this comparison as we have seen in his aforementioned verses.

The image of a lonely frightened deer left behind with her little fawn becomes a parallel image to that of the beloved, who is described as having the same big dark eyes, and the same long neck. This is an important theme within ‘udhrī poetry, as Jamīl repeats this image three or four times, and Majnūn adopts it as a core motif of the similes in his poetry. Laylā is often portrayed as a gazelle in Majnūn’s verses, he even declares that the gazelle is almost Laylā herself, except of course, for the antlers. Laylā’s neck, in particular, is depicted like the neck of a gazelle.

Kuthayyir offers a series of images in order to achieve the position where the beloved is as beautiful as, or more than, a doe:

The white-breasted shining-backed gazelle,
who takes her young to the cool of the shade
and scratches with her horns the fruit of an Arak tree
and reaches with her hooves if the branches are high,
is no more beautiful of eye or neck or throat than she
when she wears her finery.

---

44 Majnūn, p. 108.
45 Jamīl, pp. 59, 85.
46 See p. 89 of this chapter.
47 Ibid., pp. 59, 85, 111.
48 Majnūn, p. 217.
49 Majnūn, p. 176.
50 Kuthayyir, p. 153. Interestingly, another Umayyad poet, ‘Umar b. Abī Rabī‘ah, devoted the following verses to the difference between girl and gazelle: A young gazelle grazing upon a meadow high On even hills reminds me of the Taymite’s daughter I said to it/her, feeling some apprehension in my heart— For I had never seen such a similarity— How you resemble her! But for the leanness of your legs, And that your flanks are not like hers, That you are bare and naked while she is
He also says:

She captured me with the eyes of a gazelle
who is accompanied by her white newly-born to the Arak trees
in the bend of the wadi of Bisha
where the plaintive doves sing;
as if those doves who called loudly in the morning
become at noon chanting songresses for wine-drinkers.

This doe is usually a white deer: *rīm*. Once again, whiteness is stressed in *al-ghazal al-’udhri*. Reading Sells’s analysis of some classical Arabic poems, I would also argue that in these verses quoted above, the poet ‘set up a descriptive point only to be overrun through the semantic overflow of the passage. The movement of the poem continually overflows the descriptive points the simile poses’. The metaphor introduced here is that of the beloved as a doe. Kuthayyir introduces the doe apparently as a metaphor for the beloved by saying: ‘she captured me with a doe’s eyes’. Nevertheless, the poet becomes preoccupied with the depiction of the doe, and forgets his original motivation: a description of the beloved. The doe is shaking *Arāk* berries. In the other verses the doe is following her fawn to *Arāk*, where the doves are singing. Then, again, Kuthayyir leaves the doe that he is describing and becomes preoccupied with the description of the doves. The doves are like beautiful singers in a drinking gathering. As Sells observes:

[The doe’s metaphor] reveals a poetics that is far removed from the simple substitution of gazelle for beloved. The gazelle imagery and that of the beloved are developed synchronically. It becomes difficult to tell whether the object of description is the beloved or the gazelle.

Not naked, nor are her hands bare.
And that you have no hair, whilst hers
Is blackest flood upon her shoulders clothing her


51 Kuthayyir, p. 70.
53 Ibid., p. 143.
At a superficial level, the gazelle is a metaphor of the beloved as they share beautiful features like stunning eyes and sleek, aesthetically pleasing contours of the body. Al-Dughlí claims that Arab poets portray their beloveds as gazelles because their desert environment was poor, and they could not find other metaphor to describe them. I disagree with this assertion, and I would rather see this metaphor in a different light. As argued by Khan, especially for Majnūn, ‘gazelles are generally considered among the most serene of animals, their presence lends a pastoral air to his wildness.’

There is also another suggestion regarding the gazelle used as a trope, which connects with mythology. The gazelle was considered sacred, and Arabs would allow them to go free instead of killing them. An anecdote states that a gazelle was caught by a group of hunters, and Majnūn bought the gazelle and set it free: ‘It ran away when I set it free. O, gazelle, you owe your freedom to Layla.’ Bürgel demonstrates that ‘sparing or freeing a gazelle out of a certain feeling or affection for a person it resembled was a literary topos already in early Islamic times.’ In another anecdote, Majnūn killed a wolf which killed a deer and then he buried the deer and burnt the cadaver of the wolf. Thus, the ‘gazelles are so placed in this narrative (Majnūn’s) precisely because they lend a sentimental, romantic cast to the poet-lover’s state of wildness.’

55 Khan, p. 95.
56 Ibid., p. 95.
57 Kinany, p. 283.
58 Bürgel, “The Lady Gazelle and Her Murderous Glances”, p. 4. Find a detailed discussion of the magical and numinous background of gazelle metaphor in this article, pp. 6-10.
59 Al-Isfahani, vol. 2, p. 377. W. Robertson Smith states that the south Arab tribe called Banū Harith ‘among whom if a dead gazelle was found it was solemnly buried, and the whole tribe mourned for it seven days’, W. Robertson Smith, *Kinship and Marriage in Early Arabia* (Cambridge: University Press, 1885), p. 227.
60 Khan, p. 96.
Moreover, the emphasis on the image of a deer with its fawn could be understood in the light of the woman who has become sacred through motherhood. This process has its roots in ancient Arab religious belief, which used to worship the goddess-mother. The ancient Arabs portrayed her as a mother-deer and a mother-oryx\(^\text{61}\). It seems that the poets simply inherited this image and they applied it to their beloveds. However, the 'udhrī poets used these images without seeing their beloveds in term of motherhood.

4.3.3 The face of the beloved

The face of the beloved centers the attention of 'udhrī poets. Every single feature of it is celebrated in generous description. The poets clearly realize the importance and status of the face as a centre of one’s beauty, and associate with it roles of communication and seduction.

With regard to the beloved’s hair, 'udhrī poetry defines attractive feminine hair as black, thick, fragrant, and especially perfumed with ambergris and basil\(^\text{62}\). It is usually falling in waves, and sometimes also with curls. Kuthayyir describes 'Azzah’s hair as dark tresses clustering down her back like bunches of grapes\(^\text{63}\).

Moving to the beloved’s cheeks, they are portrayed as glowing, and amazingly soft\(^\text{64}\). In fact, the stress on softness is recurrent in 'udhrī poem. The beloved appears in it as a highly sensitive woman. Her body is so tender, an insect’s minute wing would make it bleed\(^\text{65}\). Moreover, Buthaynah’s skin is so soft that whenever she has a bath, the water almost injures her skin\(^\text{66}\) and Laylā’s finger is

---

\(^{61}\) Al-Baṭal, p. 95  
\(^{62}\) Majnun, p. 85.  
\(^{63}\) Kuthayyir, p. 197.  
\(^{64}\) Majnun, p. 72.  
\(^{65}\) Jamil, p. 112.  
\(^{66}\) Jamil, p. 30.
described as being of pure silk\(^67\). ‘Afrā’ is depicted as a woman who is completely enveloped with down (\textit{muna’ammah})\(^68\), and all of her fingertips are tinted\(^68\). The exaggeration of describing the tenderness of the beloved in so far that the smallest of ants walking on her skin would make it bleed, persuades the author of \textit{al-Zahrah} to write about it. He cites many verses like those with these images, and criticizes them as extreme exaggeration (\textit{sarfün shadīf})\(^69\). In my view, they are extreme, but this highlights an image of the beloved by the lover as being synonymous with the softer components of the world, like water and light.

As for the mouth of the beloved, this feature assumes the utmost significance within ‘\textit{udhrī}’ poetry and the poets provide series similes to celebrate it. The mouth is given a great deal of attention in \textit{al-ghazal al-‘udhrī}, due to a number of reasons. First, it is considered as a basic aspect of the beauty of the beloved. Second, it is the place for kisses and pleasurable contact. Third, it is the part of the body for speaking, and the source of beautiful words and discourse. The adjectives given to the mouth in \textit{al-ghazal al-‘udhrī} concentrate on describing the mouth’s aromatic smell. The smell is being described as musk\(^70\) and the poet draws a link between the mouth’s perfumed smell and its pretty smile, so the poet’s beloved smiles often and ‘when she smiles, some parts of her beautiful teeth appear’\(^71\). When the beloved smiles her beautiful teeth --which have spaces between them-- appear\(^72\). The attention given to the smell of the mouth and its shape is incomparable with that given to its taste. The ‘\textit{udhrī}

\(^{67}\) Majnūn, p. 52.  
^{68} ‘Urwah, pp. 25, 46.  
^{69} Ibn Da’ud, p. 135.  
^{70} Jamīl, pp. 18, 122, Majnūn, p. 36.  
^{71} Jamīl, p. 111.  
^{72} Kuthayyir, p. 70, Majnūn, pp. 115, 120, Jamīl, p. 67.
poets attribute large parts of their poems to describe how amazing is the taste of the beloved's mouth, how sweet her saliva.

As if her mouth is full of the essence of carnation, and musk early morning clouds raindrops are in her mouth.  

This image of the beloved’s mouth scented with good smell and full of raindrops is very similar to certain poetic images in pre-Islamic poetry. For instance, Imru’ al-Qays says:

Wine and recent rain, blossom, incense smoke
Cool from her mouth I kissed
In the soaring song of dawn.

Jamil also describes Buthaynah's saliva by saying that it is a mixture of raindrops, wine and scent:

She captivated me with her beautiful mouth, whose straight teeth appear when she smiles and her mouth has a fascinating smell and cold saliva, As if vintage wine is mixed with her saliva and early pure raindrops mixed with honey.

The significant word here is “captivated” because her beautiful mouth is one of the first things that seduced him. While Jamil refers occasionally to the beloved's saliva as wine, Majnun talks in detail about this “wine”. He describes its production process and how it was fermented in Hawran with bottles of wine that were kept for a period of time so that its value would increase:

Not even a protected fermented wine in Hawran which emits sparks when it is poured from its bottle, And which is surrounded by other similar bottles of wine which the sellers have kept for sale, Is better than the taste of her mouth which if its saliva is mixed with musk at night,

73 Majnun, p. 222.
75 Jamil, p. 120.
76 A city in Syria, known for its good wine at that time.
It could be argued that the poet includes the storage and protection of the wine in order to make an indirect reference to the difficulty and the time involved to reach his beloved to kiss her. Majnūn’s image of a fermented wine which the sellers have kept for sale for a long time, as used to describe the beloved’s saliva, recalls a similar image in the pre-Islamic ghazal. Al-Muraqqash al-Asghar starts his verses with the exact phrase: ‘Not even a fermented wine’, and then he goes on to describe the unique treatment that this wine has received. It has been protected for twenty years, and kept for later sale. After this description of this special wine, al-Muraqash says: ‘It is better than the taste of her mouth when I come to visit her (his beloved) at night.’ Undoubtedly, Majnūn’s image is derived from al-Muraqqash.

It could be argued that the description of the beloved’s saliva as rain drops and wine suggests a link between her and sacred objects. Rain is a primary source for water; a verse in Quran reads ‘we made from water every living thing’. Wine also carries certain religious meanings. As shown by pre-Islamic poetry, wine was an important component in some religious rituals. Wine was considered as the sacred liquid of the gods, giving them their extraordinary powers. In spite of the prohibition of wine in Islam, poets continue to refer to it, although without reference to sacred rituals. In Majnūn’s afore-cited poem, the description of the wine that resembles his beloved’s saliva appears in great detail.

---

77 Majnūn, pp. 106-107.
79 Al-Anbiya’ (21:30).
80 Al-Batāl, pp. 74-75.
In other verses Majnūn insists on the sweetness of Laylā's mouth while claiming that he had not tasted it in reality. He reports having stared at her mouth the way people stare at clouds and perceive the sweetness of their raindrops\(^{81}\). However, if Majnūn avoids saying that he had really tasted the wine of his beloved's mouth, Kuthayyir refers to this directly and says that the honey of her mouth is tasted only by her bedfellow and that other people are prohibited from doing so. Let us follow the succession of these descriptions:

The sweet saliva of her mouth  
which has bevelled teeth in the late night  
became like honey that is mixed with cold raindrops  
of early morning clouds in \textit{majādīḥ}\(^{82}\)  
those who cannot obtain her mouth enjoy looking at its beauty  
and she waters her bedfellow from her sweet mouth  
when he kisses her suddenly  
she cleans her snow-white teeth at dawn,  
by a green \textit{miswak}\(^{83}\) from \textit{Nuʿman}  
every creditor was repaid except the poet  
As 'Azzah does not achieve his wish  
so he remains thirsty for her\(^{84}\) \[17\]

To symbolise their agony in love and distance from the beloved, Udhri poets use themes such as 'the late night', 'the creditor' and 'a thirsty person'. Kuthayyir states that his thirst for his beloved is not slaked while all other withheld creditors get repaid. Talking about the description of the mouth and thirst is so important because the beloved’s saliva is not just a delicious honey but also water that quenches the thirst. The lover’s passion for this water always makes him very thirsty, and we will talk later about this in detail. Finally, the beloved’s saliva is reported to be a cure for sick people. Moreover, it is said to also bring dead people to life again when they

---

\(^{81}\) Majnūn, p. 156.  
\(^{82}\) Arabs’ old device for mixing wine.  
\(^{83}\) Tooth stick with a beautiful smell.  
\(^{84}\) Kuthayyir, pp. 70-71.
taste it\textsuperscript{85}. In addition, the beloved’s smiling and sweet mouth is described as a source for beautiful words. Beautiful words and discourse are a composite for beauty itself\textsuperscript{86}.

\textbf{4.3.4 The Scent of the Beloved}

The sweet scent of the beloved is also celebrated in ‘\textit{udhrī}’ poetry. The smell of musk emanates from her body\textsuperscript{87} and diffuses itself about her. When the lover visits her during the night, he smells the sweet scent of a mixture of wine, musk and ambergris\textsuperscript{88}. The lavender and musk perfume her clothes\textsuperscript{89}. Her hair breathes sweet basil and ambergris\textsuperscript{90}. Her aroma is sweeter than the aroma of greensward\textsuperscript{91}. Jamīl says:

\begin{quote}
It is as if the particles of pure-fragranced Musk with which she perfumes her sleeves and elbows rise when she rises from her bed and will be passed to whoever embraces her\textsuperscript{92}
\end{quote}

Moreover, Majnūn declares:

\begin{quote}
If we travel at night, and you are in front of us merely your sweet aroma will guide our she-camels\textsuperscript{93}
\end{quote}

Here, the scent is not just enjoyment, is not simply a scent to remember and enjoy\textsuperscript{94}. It is not only a guide but a beacon for any one who travels during the night. Its aroma is not only effective in the human world; it also has power in other non-human

\textsuperscript{85} Jamīl, p. 38.
\textsuperscript{86} This study will elaborate more on the role of conversations in \textit{al-ghazal al-‘udhrī} later.
\textsuperscript{87} Ibid., p. 68.
\textsuperscript{88} Ibid., p. 39.
\textsuperscript{89} Ibid., p. 113.
\textsuperscript{90} Majnūn, p. 85.
\textsuperscript{91} Kuthayyīr, p. 110.
\textsuperscript{92} Jamīl, p. 68.
\textsuperscript{93} Majnūn, p. 230.
\textsuperscript{94} As ‘Umar b. Abī Rabi‘ah, for instance, defines his beloved’s smell in his famous poem: “Amin āl Nu‘min anta ghadin fa mubkiru”, see his \textit{Diwan}, p. 101.
world: that of our she-camels. In the above cited verse the beloved’s scent is a beacon for human and non-human worlds.

4.3.5 The Figure of the Beloved

The ‘udhrī poet also represents the whole figure of his beloved. There are certain elements in this figure which appear frequently in the poems. The poet’s lady is a plumpish lady. Buthaynah’s bosom is shining like gallpots of silver. It is clear, bright, and white. Its ampleness is stressed again when Jamīl says:

Her breasts and behind prevent her chemise from touching her belly or from touching her back.

In ‘udhrī poetry, as in pre-Islamic poetry, the beloved’s curved body is celebrated in several images. According to Jamīl, Majnūn, and Kuthayyir she has tenderly plump ankles. Her appendages are plump (khudāt). Her legs are smooth of shank and soft of thigh. The most crucial denominator of the beloved’s body is her plump buttocks. This feature attracts the poet’s attention, and they celebrate it using several similes. The favorite simile for heavy hips in ‘udhrī poetry is moistened sand, and the rump-curve of a sand dune. ‘Urwah describes ’Afra by saying that there are two sand dunes under her waist, over which a rain shower falls:

And underneath the two (breasts) are two compacted sand dunes which have been struck by droplets of rain from Gemini.

Likewise, Majnūn, Jamīl, and Kuthayyir compose verses describing their beloved’s buttocks as a soft dune. She is often portrayed as a woman proud of her shape. She

95 Jamīl, p. 27.
96 Ibid., p. 51.
97 Ibid., p. 117.
98 Majnūn, p. 115.
99 Kuthayyir, p. 197.
100 Jamīl, p. 71.
101 Jamīl, p. 122.
102 ‘Urwah, p. 47.
would feel happy if the wind blew and wrapped her clothes around her tightly, showing off her voluptuous body. Moreover, the beloved’s buttocks weigh her down so heavily that she can barely walk. The image of the woman tired from walking is repeated in al-ghazal al-‘udhri. Kuthayyir compares ‘Azzah’s walk to a torrential stream (sayl) that is obstructed by the curve of the wadi, so it runs very slowly. Although the woman in those poems cannot walk well because of her rotund body, her slender waist is just like a ben’s bough. Qays describes Lubna:

Whenever she walks a span of earth,
She drags her feet, panting, so she doesn’t go more than a span
She has a behind which shakes when she walks
and a lean-waisted body like the branch of the ben tree

The slight waist of the beloved is described also by Jamīl in several verses: ‘she is lithe-waist, just like al-Sabiryyiah’. The poets usually link the slender waist with heavy hips beneath, and plump breasts above.

Comparing these compositions to pre-Islamic poetry, one shall find similar images of a woman who can barely walk, or who has a slender waist and plump buttocks. Moreover, some phrases from pre-Islamic poetry are re-used in ‘udhri poetry, almost verbatim. For example, Ka‘b b. Zuhayr says:

She has lithe-waist, plump buttocks,
She is neither short, nor tall.

---

104 Jamīl, p. 113, Kuthayyir, p. 197.
105 Jamīl, p. 113, Qays, p. 52, Majnūn, p. 60.
106 Kuthayyir, p. 144.
107 Ben tree (Moringa).
108 Qays, p.52.
109 Jamīl, p59. al-Sabiryyiah is a soft kind of cloth. It has been used to describe a woman’s belly since the pre-Islamic period. ‘Antarah, for instance, says: “[her] belly is soft like al-Sabiryyiah”, Diwan ‘Antarah (Beirut: Dār ṣadr, 1992), p. 110.
110 For more instances see: Jamīl, pp. 37, 45, 59, 71. Majnūn, p. 115, Kuthayyir, pp. 40,124.
And Jami says:

هيفاء مقبلة، عجزاء مدبرة تمت فليس بري في خلفها أود
She has lithe-waist, plump buttocks,
She is perfect, with no defector drawback in her body.

Imru’ al-Qays says:

وجيد كجيد الريم ليس يفاحش إذا هي نصته ولا بمعطل
She shows me a throat like the throat of an (white) antelope, not ungainly
When she lifts it upwards, neither naked of ornament.

And Kuthayyir says:

وجيد كجيد الريم حال تزينه غدائر مستوفي العقاص بصورها
She shows me a throat like the throat of an (white) antelope,
naked of ornament, but decorated and adorned
with pendulous, long, thick hair.

As seen in these verses, there is a direct reference to previous traditions, not just in images, but also in literal phrases such as: 'وجيد كجيد الريم’ (She has lithe-waist, plump buttocks), and (a throat like the throat of an (white) antelope).

4.4 Laylā’s Portrayal in Persian Painting

We have seen how the popular notion of classical Arabic ideal beauty has been applied to the portrayal of the beloved in ‘udhrī poetry; several unchanging elements characterize such portrayals. However, if we were to examine the depiction of the beloved in the legend based on ‘udhrī love stories that appeared centuries later in Persia, we would discover a completely different portrayal. Yet, the influence of the fashionable theme of any given era on the representation of an object is common in art. Therefore, my justification for making this comparison between Layla’s

113 Jami, p. 117.
115 Kuthayyir, p. 106.
portrayal in Majnun’s poetry and her portrayal in later Persian paintings, which is
based on Majnun’s legend, is to examine the influence of the fashionable theme on
different forms of art.

There are a small number of extant manuscripts which contain paintings
illustrating versions of the love story of Majnūn and Laylā, Khamse, written by
Nizami (1150-1214), the great Persian poet. As Uster demonstrates:

Numerous copies of Nizami’s hamse were produced not only in his own
day but in the succeeding centuries because it was a much beloved
work. Many of these copies are illuminated and significant proportions
were inscribed by famous calligraphers. Those of the highest art
historical value whether in terms of the text, the miniature illumination,
or the calligraphy in the flowing ta ’lik Arabic script- are located in the
Topkapi Palace Museum Library in Istanbul.

The details of the various manuscripts are not my prime focus here. I will merely
concentrate on the paintings in order to evaluate how Laylā is depicted. It is
noticeable, however, that the image of Laylā in these Persian paintings suggests
another depiction of the beloved, and differs from that offered by Majnūn’s poetry.

While she is presented in Majnūn’s verses as an ideal of Arabian desirable beauty,
where big black eyes, ample bosom, slender waist, plump legs, and heavy hips are
typified, Laylā is presented in these Persian paintings with a differently imagined
figure. One painting shows Laylā receiving Majnūn in her tent, Laylā is illustrated as
an exceptionally thin young maiden. There is no trace of a bosom, nor are there any
rounded parts on her body. She is shown with a round face, “Chinese” eyes, a tiny
mouth, and arched eyebrows. This painting occurs in an illustrated version of
Nizami’s Hamse, dated 1444, and belongs to the Shiraz school of miniature

116 Treatment of the Majnūn love legend appeared first in the form of mathnawi in Persia. Nizami’s
hamse has strongly influenced the subsequent writers of the subject. However, the transfer of Majnūn
legend from Arabic to Persian literature, and the new elements have added to it, is beyond the scope of
this chapter.
117 Celal Uster, “Ill-fated lovers in the desert Madjnun wa- Layla”, in Art and Culture Magazine,
In another painting, Majnūn is depicted speaking with an elderly man in a date grove some distance from Laylā, who is sitting down. Laylā is illustrated as a sad young woman, putting her hand on her cheek. The most apparent themes of her figure are her moon face and her arched eyebrows. Likewise, in a painting showing Majnūn and Laylā fainting, Laylā appears as a thin maiden, with arched eyebrows meeting on her forehead, and a flat chest. In another painting, Laylā looks upset while slapping her husband. Her face has the same fine features, and “Chinese” eyes. She is portrayed in a sitting position and is given a slim body. Her raised hand is nothing like the plump arm that has been described in Majnūn’s verses.

It must be noted that most of those paintings were accomplished in Harat in the fifteenth century. During that time, features such as moon face, “Chinese” eyes, a tiny mouth, and arched eyebrows became the usual cliche for beautiful young people, male and female. The beloved moon faced, is a Buddha face. She is even shown in the setting of the Buddha’s house. The artists create representations of the Buddha and they portray the beloved in the same style, with recurring features.

However, several versions exist showing the same image of the illustration of Nizami’s Hamse, but from different perspectives and with different aspects included. Some painters focus on Majnūn, or Laylā, some on the animals surrounding them, and some painters focus on the sufi imagery of the story. For example, one painting

---

119 Shiraz school of miniature painting, “Majnūn speaks with an elderly man in a date grove apart from Laylā, who is sitting at a distance”, ca.1480, Khamse Nizami Mathnawi, Akkuyunlu Turkmen dynasty, (Library of Topkap Museum. No.H.761.f.133b, Istanbul).
122 I have gained this information from a meeting with Prof. Robert Hillenbrand on 20 March 2007.
shows Majnūn dying on Layla’s tomb, in which no one around him seems to care.123 This painting alludes to a very important sufi theme. Within some sufi traditions, the way to achieve ultimate truth, or love is gained by the suffering of the soul, totally alone, without any support. As mentioned earlier, my only interest is a specific aspect of this: the depiction of the beloved through these images.124 Subsequently, it seems, through this brief review, that Laylā’s portrayal is influenced by the fashionable themes of the era. Clearly her depiction in Arabic poetry varies greatly from her depiction within Persian paintings. Nonetheless, although it is almost a contrasting image, Laylā’s portrayal is enacted through a stereotyped image, in both Arabic poetry and Persian paintings.

4.5 The Desirable Image of a Corpulent Female Body

We have seen how these bodily descriptions are similar to those with which the Arab poets since pre-Islamic period used to describe their ladies. But let us consider a bit more the figure of a desirable woman as a corpulent one. Bodily descriptions take on erotic characteristics, when concentrating on the shape and form of the female body. Indeed, ‘several round images, such as the egg and the pearl, are used in the classical qasīdah in symbolic association with the beloved’125. If a bosom is muʿīd that means that it fills one’s hand, and if it is nāʿūr that means that it fills one’s eyes.126 In addition, the description of a woman who does not have heavy hips as rasḥā’ and zala’ codes her appearance through negative adjectives that indicate she is not a desirable woman. Jamīl makes a comparison between Buthaynah, who would feel

---

124 I need not outline here the differences between these versions of the one image.
125 Michael A.Sells, p. 133.
126, Abd al-Karim, p. 211.
happy if the wind blew and wrapped her clothes around her, showing off her voluptuous body, with the zul women (who do not have heavy hips), so they try to avoid the wind as they do not have any thing to show off\textsuperscript{127}. The use of this lexicon indicates a general tendency towards sensuality and suggests a highly tactile relationship.

In the following section I will examine an argument about the preference of a corpulent woman among Arabs after the pre-Islamic period, provided by a contemporary author: Khalil ‘Abd al-Karim, in his book entitled: \textit{Al-‘Arab wa al-mar’ah ḥafriyyah fī al-istīr al-mukhaymr: The Arabs Concept of Women}\textsuperscript{128}. His argument is based on a study of several Arabic lexicons and therefore seems to have influenced other relevant writings in the field\textsuperscript{129}. I will summarize his argument for the purpose of analyzing it and to set up my own position challenging his assertions.

Attempting to explain the Arab’s preference for corpulent women\textsuperscript{130}, ‘Abd al-Karim claims that it is because Arabs in the period when this literature flourished and lexicons for describing female bodies were developed, lived with camels and horses, depending completely upon them for their lives, and they viewed women within the same framework through which they viewed their horses and camels. His study includes an investigation of Arabic dictionaries which reveals that the roots of words referring to women and animals have much in common, so ‘Abd al-Karim argues that the Arabic words to describe women are derived from the same linguistic roots as those used to describe camels and horses. According to him, ‘Arabs prefer a fat

---
\textsuperscript{127} Jamil, p. 21. ‘Umar b. Abī Rabī‘ah went so far as wishing that slim women rashawāt should be isolated and put into exile! See his \textit{Diwan}, p.11.

\textsuperscript{128} The author provides this title to his book in English, along with the Arabic title.


\textsuperscript{130} Although the author mainly focuses on Arabs of early or pre-Islamic period Arabs, his book includes many references to contemporary Arabs, especially from the Arabian Peninsula.
camel *kināz*, and a horse with big hips and plump thighs *hirkuḥah*. The more a woman is similar to the *kināz* camel or *hirkuḥah* horse, the more preferable she becomes. He also claims that camel-raising is an economic and social custom among Arabs. The geographical environment imposes a strong bond between the Arab and his camel and owning a camel is also an indication of a high social position within the tribe. Therefore, this association makes the camel a measure or norm for women as well.

‘Abd al-Karīm provides series of instances from Arabic dictionaries to support his assertion. For example, *dāḥūḥ* could be used for a woman and a she-camel alike. *Ḍamkhaj* means a large she-camel and a large woman. *Ṣānīʿah* means a good she-camel and *sānīʿah* means a beautiful woman, and so on.

Since Arab men preferred strong animals with large features, they use the same language to depict the preferred type of woman, that is, one with similar features. Moreover, ‘Abd al-Karīm claims that women were, like animals, used for enjoyment, domestic service, and the preservation of the community.

Therefore, it is no wonder that Arab men used much the same vocabulary to refer to women and to their camels and horses. From ‘Abd al-Karīm’s perspective, that indicates the low status of women in Arab culture. ‘If Arabic contains such crude vocabulary to describe the intimate relationship between a man and a woman, how can one proclaim that it is a poetic or beautiful language?’ ‘Abd al-Karīm emphasises that the hard life of the Bedouin had a strong and lasting influence on the Arabic lexicon. This, in turn, he claims, has influenced other nations that adopted the

\[\text{References:}\]

132 Ibid., p. 36.
133 Ibid., pp. 39-41.
134 For further details, see ‘Abd al-Karīm, p. 184.
Arabic language later. That means that the Arabic language changed the status of women, in the nations that adopted it, from high to low\textsuperscript{135}.

These are the main threads of ‘Abd al-Karīm’s study, which create a link between Arabs’ concept of women as revealed by their language, and their Bedouin life which depends upon animals such as camels and horses. However, I would like to challenge ‘Abd al-Karīm’s assertions maintaining that he takes an extremely critical and reductive view of the subject. Many of his conclusions are open to further discussion, especially the link suggested by the author between the language used by the Bedouin and women’s status in Muslim culture in general. Yet, the equine lexicon, and similar linguistic roots to describe a woman and a she-camel do not mean necessarily that they are in the same state, or that the Arabs could not distinguish between human and animal beauty. In many languages, it could be argued, there is an exchange between semantic fields. The shared stems for words implicate richness and a derivative capability that is inherent in the language rather than a lack of creative similes and imagination. Not only in Arabic. In English, for example, a slang word to describe an attractive young unmarried woman is ‘filly’ (a young mare or female horse). There are also other colloquial words that describe girls as 'chick' and 'bird'. One might note here that these are all from masculine points of view. The convergence of male-centric societies. What ‘Abd al-Karīm criticises as crude vocabulary to describe the intimate relationship between a man and a woman, exists, in fact, in other languages. For instance, in Shakespeare’s Othello, Iago informs Brabantio, Desdemona’s father, of Desdemona’s elopement with Othello:

\textsuperscript{135} Ibid., p. 229.
‘Even now, very now, an old black ram is tapping your white ewe.’ Moreover, attributing the desirable figure of a woman to the advantageous figure of a horse is open to more than one interpretation, as the Arab horse is certainly not built like a cart horse, rather it has elegant and slender features.

‘Alī al-Baṭal advances yet another rationale which appears more convincing than ‘Abd al-Karīm’s assertion. He suggests that the image of the corpulent woman is inherited form ancient religious belief. The Goddess-mother was one of the deities that were worshipped by the ancient Arabs. Her corpulent body symbolizes fertility and motherhood. Motherhood is a principle function of the Goddess-mother, who gives life and enriches the tribe of warriors and preserves the human race. It is essential that a god is depicted with all the characteristics for which he is being worshipped. Therefore, when an Arab poet portrays a woman as fat and comments that she “hardly walked” this is because he is following the perfect image of a sacred woman. It is sacred particularly because of her sexual fertility which leads to motherhood. Through the worship of the Goddess-mother and associating her with the sun and its associated images like a gazelle and a palm tree, this leads to the predominant image of desirable woman. Al-Baṭal argues that the motifs that usually constitute this image indicate that classical Arabic poetry used earlier metaphors, yet at the same time lost an association with the ancient religion, which worshipped the sun-mother and its associated images like the gazelle and the palm tree. His suggestion is based on the idea that religious sanctity was ascribed to women in ancient ages, but the religious associations were lost over time. The later poet may

---

137 Al-Baṭal, p. 61.
139 Al-Baṭal, p. 70.
have preserved the image of the female corpulent body, but removed the ancient pagan religious associations from it. Therefore, this image became a model of desirable female beauty, whilst moving away from its possible ancient roots.

While the above cited theory is persuasive, I would also propose that in ancient Arabic culture, a woman’s corpulence and her ample hips would be seen as a sign of her prosperity and wealth, leading one to assume her to be of a high class and of noble origin—and someone whose family was always able to feed her well. It goes without saying that attaining such a woman of noble birth indicates great courage and capability on the part of the poet\textsuperscript{140}. However, while that might be the case for the pre-Islamic poet, for the ‘udhri poet, the beloved is usually portrayed as a cousin or at least one as of his relatives. Thus, there is no need at all to show his courage. He is rather describing her beauty within the favorite motifs of preceding traditions, which were inherited from pre-Islamic predominant poetic themes.

However, a slow evolution in the standard portrayal of beauty would eventually lead to the preference for \textit{al-majdūlah}, which is classified by al-Jāḥīz:

Most people who know about women, most experts on the subject, agree in preferring the \textit{majdūla}, that is to say the type of woman intermediate between fat and thin. Her figure must be elegant and shapely, her shoulders symmetrical and her back straight; her bones must be well covered, and she must be neither too plump nor too skinny. The word \textit{majdūla} conveys the notion of tautness, of firm flesh without superfluous fat. A graceful walk is the most beautiful thing about a woman, and she cannot walk gracefully if she is portly, fat and overburdened with flesh. Indeed a \textit{majdūla} is more often slim, and her slenderness is her best known feature (…). A \textit{majdūla} is described in prose by the words: the upper part of her body is a stem and the lower part a sand-dune\textsuperscript{141}.


Al-Jāḥīẓ shows the different attitudes that had an effect on aesthetic taste during his period. The model of beauty had been developed according to the development of other forms of knowledge. The social, cultural, and ethnic structure had changed, and transformed the notions about body and beauty. The new society, in the Abbasid period, a cosmopolitan one, brought together people from Persia, Turkey, Ḥabashah, and many other regions. These included slave girls who brought new standards of beauty. Their beauty was varied, and, moreover, associated with cultural functions like music and singing. Slowly, the poet’s taste moved towards a shapely woman instead of a portly one. Al-Jāḥīẓ calls her al-majdūlah, and emphasises the fact that she is not too plump. He even makes a contrast with the preferred image drawn from earlier poetry of a woman who walks with difficulty because of her great weight.

However, his insistence on her legerity does not prevent him from noting the heaviness of the lower part of her body, so he uses the old poetic simile of the sand-dune. Moreover, the old norms and descriptions of female beauty were criticised by al-Jāḥīẓ in Kitāb al-Nisā’. He asserts that a beautiful woman is, obviously, more beautiful than an oryx, and a doe, and more beautiful than anything people may compare her to. However, in spite of al-Jāḥīẓ’s critique, poets continued to use similar figurative language to depict their women. There are endless examples of subsequent poets such as al-Mutanabbi and Abū Tammām describing beautiful women as gazelles, and portraying particular parts of their bodies as sand dunes and so on.

143 Ibid., p. 102.
4.6 Al-Ghazal al-‘Udhri: More than Imitation

The beloved, then, in these poems, is represented similarly to the beloved in the pre-Islamic ode. She appears within traditional beauty standards as established or at least confirmed by both Arabic poetry and prose since the pre-Islamic epoch. However, does that really mean that the ‘udhri poet is just imitating the old model of personifying female beauty?

Thus, does that mean that poetic tradition has more influence within ‘udhri poetry than the experience of devoted love, which is dedicated to one individual beloved, thus, describing her unique individual beauty, which is supposed to have its own features? The poetic tradition of describing the female body has existed for a long period of time. We must remember that the perception of poetry, at that time, relied on how close the poem resembled or catered to the established taste in receiving poetry. Hence, ‘the poet was expected to work within the framework of the literary tradition (...) the ideas were measured by their transmission of ancient established common sense’\(^{146}\). We might recall a famous critical opinion, from Ibn Qutaybah, which appeared later and stressed this connection:

The later poets should not deviate from what the preceding ones were doing. They should neither stop at inhabited houses to recall their memories and write their poems, nor lament beside settled houses because the preceding poets did that at ruined and obliterated dwellings. Since the earlier poets travelled by camels and described them in their poems, the later poets should not travel by donkeys or mules and do the same. Later poets are not to stop to drink at sweet streaming water for the reason that the earlier poets stopped at turbidity ponds. The later poets ought not to pass by myrtle, daffodil and flowers on their way to the praised person because the preceding poets the preceding poets passed by wormwood and ‘ararah\(^{147}\) on their way to the praised person\(^{148}\).

\(^{146}\) Behrens-Abouseif, p. 100.

\(^{147}\) It is an Arabic name for a kind of small trees which have a very nice smell.

Nevertheless, in spite of the potential weight of literary tradition, another conclusion may be reached. The bodily image of the woman is governed by the one who describes her, who usually confines himself to the certain criteria of beauty pertaining to his Eve. Alternatively, it is governed by the lover’s preeminence that transfers everything about his beloved into beauty. For this very reason, it could be argued that the ‘udhrī imitation of the older norms does not mean that they do not see their beloveds with their own eyes. Kinany claims that:

The ‘udhrī poets frequently used old clichés to express their new, intense, and rich feelings, so that they put new wine into old bottles, and did not realize that an old cliché even when used to express new sentiment has a limited and established power of expression, and that it could not suggest anything more than a very conventionalized and therefore restricted sentiment and thought149.

I would rather suggest that the ‘udhrī lover sees his beloved through his own passionate eyes, which incline to idealize the object of his love. Therefore, the ‘udhrī poet stipulates the boundaries of ideal beauty— as defined in Arabic poems— upon his own, unique beloved. He tends to idealize her, and thus to obtain his image of the ideal woman. Hence, he sees and describes his beloved in terms affected by his cultural and aesthetic inheritance. She becomes, through his loving eyes, the very archetype of ideal beauty. No one can replace her, even the literary beauty model. She becomes the model. She becomes the archetype, illuminated and illustrated with all the necessary and desirable colours, and contours of beauty. That is what a lover poet would do: he made his beloved the ideal. Al-‘Aqqād declares:

Art is concerned with eternal images and everlasting models, not with creatures that appear once in life and then disappear. What concerns the artist with beauty is its ability to be a general model for many individuals or to all species150.

149 Kinany, p. 285.
150 Al-‘Aqqād, p. 17.
This is well-articulated in an essential statement ascribed to Buthaynah: ‘He (Jamīl) sees me within the eyes that are not in your head!’ stated in an answer to the Caliph’s (‘Abd al-Malik b. Marwān) enquiry of her: ‘What did Jamīl see in you, to compose such beautiful poetry about you?’ Buthaynah’s response to ‘Abd al-Malik governs the lover’s eyes, and the poet’s imagination, rather than the ordinary eyes, or reality. Reality does not matter in the realm of the poetic lover. We might remember here the anecdotes that insist on Buthaynah’s ordinary appearance. It is the authority of love, which transfers every aspect of the beloved’s body into perfect beautiful detail, and personifies her as the imagined model of the ideal woman. This model is now firmly engraved into collective consciousness and literary tradition. The common features of the cultural background do not contrast with the originality in feeling. In spite of this, ʿudhri poetry has its own individuality, as we shall see in the following section.

4.7 The Ethereal Nature of Beauty

Although al-ghazal al-ʿudhri makes use of tropes and metaphors that were inherited from the pre-Islamic period, there is an additional element that distinguishes it from the previous tradition and gives it its special elements. The ʿudhri poet’s imitation of older forms and notions in his descriptive verses addressing his beloved’s beauty is combined with an attempt to idealize her. He does not want her beauty to be compared to or derived from other women’s beauty, even though their beauty is the perfect pattern of female beauty. This is observed from the poet’s insistence that his

---

beloved is the most beautiful creature. Comparative phrases are frequent in *al-ghazal al-‘udhri*, so as to imply that the beloved is incomparable with any other elements in nature, or humanity. When the poem portrays the beloved as a special animal like a deer and an oryx, it states that the beloved is more beautiful than them\(^\text{153}\). Likewise, the poem often stresses the higher position of the beloved compared with nature’s components like the sun and moon\(^\text{154}\). The moon and sun themselves are incapable of emulating her brilliant light\(^\text{155}\). Comparative phrases are also used to emphasize the unique beauty of the beloved among other women. Jamīl asserts: “Her eye and neck are the most beautiful among all creatures”\(^\text{156}\). If she is the most beautiful among all creatures (*khalq Allaḥ*), she is necessarily the most beautiful woman in the world. Her stunning beauty is definitely not contending with any sort of beauty\(^\text{157}\). Qays declares that Lubnā is the most perfect human from top to toe:

```
O most perfect of people from head to toe,
And most beautiful of people clothed or unclothed\(^\text{158}\)
```

The beloved surpasses other women in every thing; Jamīl portrays Buthaynah as the moon whereas the other women are merely minor stars:

```
She is the full moon,
whereas the other women are [merely minor] stars
And what a great distance between them
She is superior in beauty to other people,
just as the Night of Qadr is preferred
over one thousand months\(^\text{159}\)
```


\(^{154}\) Kuthayyir, p. 153.

\(^{155}\) Majnun, pp. 115, 160

\(^{156}\) Jamīl, p. 85.


\(^{158}\) Qays, p.109.

\(^{159}\) Jamīl, p. 37.
Her body has its own value, so her own natural beauty is its decoration, and adornment\textsuperscript{160}. This beauty is independent from outside influences. Just like the poet’s independence from any form of beauty, any human or any companion. Therefore, he does away with people, does not enjoy their company, and, even more, he hates any speech that is not hers, and any scene from which she is absent:

\begin{quote}
After her, it is as though the people I love are the sap of the split bitter apple tree; for after her, my eyes detest every sight, and after her, my ears detest every speech\textsuperscript{161}
\end{quote}

Consequently, it could be argued that although there are several evident erotic elements depicting female beauty in \textit{al-ghazal al-‘udhri}, it is also the case that the description and feeling of this beauty is not always purely erotic or sensual. Of course, the sensual feeling runs through many images in this \textit{ghazal}, and influences its descriptive language, especially while imitating the older norms and patterns. Nonetheless, \textit{al-ghazal al-‘udhri}, in many cases, evaluates beauty and sublimates it to worlds that transcend human ones. This was shown when we discussed the issue of the ‘udhrī poet’s persistence in describing the light of his beloved and her status beyond that of the moon and sun. Jamīl compares Buthaynah’s luminescence with the light that illuminates every thing around her\textsuperscript{162}. Hence, the body of the beloved is perceived as glittering and soft as light.

Furthermore, the beloved’s beauty in \textit{al-ghazal al-‘udhri} is beyond nature and associated with many extraordinary effects. For example, one effect is the impossibility to resist her beauty even by the most virtuous of people:

\begin{quote}
Monks of Midian, and those I know weep from the fear of the torment while seated
\end{quote}

\textsuperscript{160} See for instances: Kuthayyir, p. 106, and Jamīl, p. 111.
\textsuperscript{161} Qays, p. 84.
\textsuperscript{162} Jamil, p. 111.
But had they heard as I have heard her speech, 
you would bow and prostrate. 
The dead is resurrected when she touches his bones 
and become immortal when they see her.  

Ibn Qayyim al-Jawziyah ascribes to a person from the ‘Udhrah tribe this passage: ‘If you, men from Banū Fīzār, see the women of our tribe, you would take them as al-Llat and al-'Uzza and leave Islam behind you!’ Preternatural effects are associated with ‘udhrī beauty to this extent that they affect people in the way that only usually religion can. One may observe this semantic exchange between religion and love. As Hamori puts it: ‘The poaching of religious language is meant in the ‘udhrī lyric to express the extent of this dangerous devotion’. Majnūn clearly says:

When I pray I turn my face towards her place 
though the right direction is the opposite one 
I do not do that through polytheism, 
but because my lovesickness resisted the cure of the doctor.  

Small wonder that the language of love converges with religious language, as the poet’s admiration of beauty resembles religious belief. In many cases, the beloved’s beauty surpasses human beauty, and there are more astonishing effects attributed to it. The woe is gone because of Laylā’s face, and rain is falling because of Laylā’s face. Her saliva is a remedy for dead people causing them to rise up from their graves. If a poison mixes with her saliva, it shall quench the poet when he drinks

---

163 Kuthayyir, p. 76.
164 Al-Llat and al-'Uzza were two important imageries that people used to worship before Islam.
165 Ibn Qayyim al-Jawziyah, p. 337.
168 Majnūn, p. 92.
169 Majnūn, p. 120, Jamāl, p. 38. A similar image can be found in the pre-Islamic ghazal, though it is really rare. For example, in his amatory prelude, A’sha Qays declares: 
If she placed a dead man on her neck
He would come to life again
There would be then no need
To carry him to a cemetery”
A’sha Qays, cited and translated by Kinany, p. 92.
it\textsuperscript{170}. Hence, \textit{al-ghazal al-’udhrī} draws a parallel between extraordinary effects attributed to beauty, and extraordinary effects attributed to prophets, saints, and \textit{hūr al-’ayn}. One might remember here the \textit{hadiths} that attributed \textit{hūr al-’ain} with great light. For example:

> It is on record on the authority of Ibn Mas‘ūd that he said: “the Apostle of God –God bless him and his family and give them peace- said that [when] God created the Garden of Eden. He summoned Jibrā’il –upon him be peace- departed and went around through out the Garden. One of the dark-eyed maidens looked down on him from one of the palaces there and she smiled at Jibrā’il –upon him be peace. As a result, the Garden of Eden became illumined by the radiance of her teeth. Jibrā’il –upon him be peace- fell down prostrate, believing that this was from the radiance of the Lord of Might Himself. Then the maiden called out [to him], “O faithful one of God, raise your head”. He did so and looked at her. Then he said: “Praise be to God Who created you”. The maiden replied: “O faithful one of God, do you know for whom I was created? [He replied “no”]. She said, “God created me [for him who] preferred seeking the pleasure of God Most High to the desires of his own heart\textsuperscript{171}.

This great light attributed to \textit{hūr al-’ayn} could be applied somehow to the \textit{’udhrī} poetic imagination while portraying the beloveds. The light of the beloved, as the light of \textit{hūr al-’ayn}, is greater than any other light. According to Majnūn, she [Laylā] is the sun whose light puts the full moon to shame, and who outshone the lightning when it flashes.\textsuperscript{172}

> The lover looks to his beloved as the only person capable of bestowing happiness on him as illustrated in this statement from Majnūn:

\begin{quote}
You are the only person who if you want
Could make me either happy or miserable\textsuperscript{173}
\end{quote}

\textsuperscript{170} Majnūn, p. 55.
\textsuperscript{172} Majnūn, p. 160.
The supplicatory language, then, is dominant in ‘udhrī discourse to the extent that the poet could not talk to his beloved directly as she was imagined as a sacred and venerated person:

When I suddenly met her I became confounded
Nothing right or wrong could I find to say.\[29\]

It is understandable that the beloved’s physical beauty is associated with such preternatural effects, as it is free from the notion of time. This beauty goes beyond time itself. It is timeless beauty, and eternally youthful. Jamīl points out:

Buthaynah said,
when she saw
locks of red hair (on my head)
Oh Jamīl, You become older and your youth's gone.
I said,
O please stop it, Buthaynah
Have you forgotten our times at Liwa and Ajfari?
When my locks were (black) just like a crow's wing,
Daubed with Musk and ambergris
Your youth will never fade
as you are a precious pearl
We are from the same time,
So how can I have grown old while you have not?\[30\]

There are two time frames in Jamīl’s poem: his time and Buthaynah’s time. His time is affected by age and vicissitude, while Buthaynah’s time is constant and does not change. Buthaynah, in Jamīl’s poem, has no past, she does not change, she is always in the present. Her beauty remains the same: yesterday, today, and tomorrow.\[31\]. She is the source of all good qualities as she is identified with the perfect, eternal, and immutable. She is removed from time altogether by the image of eternal youth, that designates her omnipotence.\[32\].

\[30\] Jamīl, p. 44.
\[31\] Adonis, p. 289.
When the beloved’s body surmounts time this implies its perfection and immortality. It is an immortal body that ascends at the level of worshipped statues and images. I would maintain that there is a link between the beloved’s body and that of worshipped idols as it appears in al-ghazal al-‘udhrī. Worshipped idols and the beloved share a common aloofness and do not respond directly to those worshipping them. Let us consider Kuthayyir’s verses:

When she left me she did not heed me, I called to her, but she was silent as a rock so smooth that gazelles, would slip if they walked there
Reluctant she was, and always cruel; and if I tired of such behavior, she wearied also

And Jamīl’s verse:

Do you not know, O mother of Dhil-Wad’, that I jest with your memories while you are impermeable

Jamīl also declares:

I await what you promised me,
as the poor man awaits the rich man counting his debts but does not fulfil a promise to us and is not impoverished
You and your promises are like nought, but the thundercloud which does not rain

Thus, she is a rock, reluctant, (summ, safūh, salahād), does not responds, or she is beyond response, just like a statue, nevertheless, she deserves, as the imageries, to be worshipped. The image of the beloved is derived from the image of stubborn rocks, and also, from the image of a statue, which is worshipped, even though it gives no response. However, we should bear in mind that despite the ‘udhrī poet’s comparing his beloved to a solid rock, and the inanimate nature that implies, he does not lose hope in what his worshipped love might give him in return: Worshippers of

---

179 Jamīl, p. 28.
180 Jamīl, p. 40.
idols used to await their idols’ response in spite of their apparent silence. They also presented the idols with sacrifices as they believed the idols were capable of bringing good and pushing away harm, along with providing rain and fertility. Although the ‘udhri poet claims that his love goes beyond the notion of taking and giving, and although he addresses his beloved when saying “do harm or good to me, no reproach”, he implies often that he nevertheless anticipates that she will be ever-giving. He is as the thirsty man to whom the water is unreachable; the debtor whose loans are unsustainable.

Kuthayyir says:

By Allah, every time I came near her  
She went far away, and when I spoke at length  
She said little

[34]

So the devotion goes beyond reason, and is regardless of the behaviour of the beloved. Even if the aloofness of the beloved leads the poet to death, he should embrace his destiny:

O When will my tortured heart be cured (of your love)  
The arrows of death are between me and seeing thou  
Despite the exile, the pain, the longing, the shivering  
You don’t come closer but I don’t go farer  
I am like a bird within the swinging palms of a child  
The bird suffers death and the child enjoys the game  
The child is too young to feel for the bird  
And the bird has no feathers to fly away

[35]

The bird in these verses is representing as being in a weak, surrendering condition so as to signify the weakness of the poet towards his love. Here, love is destiny and its powerful effect is comparable to exile, pain, longing and moreover with death itself. Yet there is no choice. The bird, signifying the poet, has no feathers to fly away. It should be clear, however, that this theme has nothing to do with the theme of

---

182 Majnun, pp. 22-23.
unrequited love. In fact, I disagree with scholars like Kinany who define ‘‘udhrī’’ love as unrequited love by arguing that ‘‘the ‘‘udhrī’’ lovers suffered indeed tremendously from all the pangs of unrequited love’’\textsuperscript{183}. An examination of ‘‘udhrī’’ poetry reveals that the beloved always plays an active part in the romance. In \textit{diwān Jamīl} there are several verses that suggest long conversations between him and Buthynah, in which they both express their longing to each other. For example, he says:

\begin{quote}
I was patient as I left in the evening and she was sorrowful
complaining to me of an ardent love
Saying: ‘‘Spend a night with me,
may I be your ransom, I will complain to you, for that is easy’’\textsuperscript{184}[36]
\end{quote}

In these verses, Buthaynah is complaining to her lover, the poet. She is even inviting him to spend the night with her. Another poem reveals a long conversation between Jamīl and Buthaynah in which she asked him to conceal his love because she is afraid that their enemies might hurt him\textsuperscript{185}. Another poem hints that Buthaynah shows her love to the poet, but she is frightened by the gossipers (\textit{al-wushāh})\textsuperscript{186}. Therefore, the complaint about the beloved’s aloofness is rather to praise her, as Arabs used to praise difficult women, and to stress the poet’s devotion for her regardless of her response to him. Jamīl addresses Buthaynah:

\begin{quote}
And you were not fair
As for (other) women, they are hateful to me now,
and as for that which is proper, she withholds\textsuperscript{187}[37]
\end{quote}

And Kuthayyir addresses ‘‘Azzah:

\begin{quote}
Do me good or do me harm, I shall not blame you,
not hate you, even when you make yourself hateful\textsuperscript{188}[38]
\end{quote}

\textsuperscript{183} Kinany, p257.  
\textsuperscript{184} Jami, p45.  
\textsuperscript{185} Jami, pp41-42.  
\textsuperscript{186} Jami, p122-123. See more instances in pp. 45,113.  
\textsuperscript{187} Jami, p28.  
\textsuperscript{188} Kuthayyir, p. 57, trans. Kinany, p291.
When ‘Azzah met the caliph ‘Abd al-Malik, she was proud of Kuthayyir’s verse on her in which he described her as a rock.\textsuperscript{189}

The immortality of the body is also related to the immortality of soul. The ‘udhri poet suggests that his love began before he was created, and would last after his death: ‘My soul became attached to hers before we were formed’\textsuperscript{190}. Consequently, it becomes valid for the ‘udhri poet to talk about eternal love, as even death will not end their mutual love. Addressing Buthaynah, Jamīl sang:

\begin{quote}
My heart will love you, as long as I live; \\
And when I die my echo will follow your echo between the tombs\textsuperscript{191} [39]
\end{quote}

‘Urwah also claims:

\begin{quote}
I love the day of Judgment since I have been told \\
That I shall meet her there\textsuperscript{192} [40]
\end{quote}

4.8 Conclusion

To sum up, in this chapter I show how the beloved’s body is depicted in \textit{al-ghazal al-‘udhri}. There are certain elements in this depiction that make use of many images and metaphors inherited from the previous period’s literature. This led to the discussion of the desirable image of a corpulent female body and its connection with ancient religious belief in which a corpulent body symbolizes fertility and motherhood; motherhood is a principle function of the Goddess-mother. In addition, I made a comparison between Laylā’s image in Arabic poetry and her image in later Persian paintings. In both forms of art the beloved is portrayed in an almost stereotypical image, which is influenced by the fashionable theme of the era.

\textsuperscript{189} See the whole story in al-İsfahani, vol. 9, p. 21. See also al-İsfahani, vol. 1, p. 336, about Laylā’s love for Majnun.
\textsuperscript{190} Jamīl, p. 29, trans. Hamori, p. 34.
\textsuperscript{192} Urwah, p. 41, trans. Kinany, p. 300.
However, *al-ghazal al-'udhri*, in my opinion, offers more than an imitation and moves away from the previous tradition by emphasising the ethereal aspect of female beauty and ascribing extraordinary effects to it. Hence, I examine themes such as the beloved’s eternal youth, her omnipotence and the devotion for her that goes beyond reason. As a result, this should lead us to think about symbolizing the body and associating it with nature, which will be the main theme of my next chapter.
Present and Absent Bodies of the Beloved

5.1 Introduction

In the previous chapter we have seen how the ‘udhrī poets depicted the body of their beloved as a model of ideal beauty. In their poetry they present her concrete, corporeal body. Nevertheless, the bodily presence in al-ghazal al-‘udhrī does not always take the form of a physical body—sometimes it also appears symbolically, alongside a physical depiction, thereby expressing the idea of both the present and absent beloved. The present form can be observed in gestures and speech. Gestures or intimate body language such as glances, gazes, sighs and smells are all illustrated in al-ghazal al-‘udhrī, indicating the physical presence of the beloved, depicting communication, a kind of wiṣāl, between the lovers at the same time. In addition, speech has always been associated with love in classical Arabic literature in general and in the ‘udhrī tradition in particular. The beloved’s speech is a characteristic of her bodily presence.

Moreover, the absence of the beloved is often presented symbolically in the form of her phantom or her placement in a location inaccessible to the lover. These images are substitutes for her actual presence and a means of keeping her in mind. Her pure absence is expressed by the poet’s longing for the place where she is, as well as by the phantom. Therefore, the phantom of the beloved and her location act as symbols for her absence.

The third aspect in al-ghazal al-‘udhrī that I aim to examine in this chapter is that of the presence through absence; the beloved who is present in the natural world but physically absent. The omnipresence of Laylā in nature, as reflected in the mind
of Majnūn, and his ability to see the signs of his love within nature will be discussed in detail.

5.2 Bodily Presence

5.2.1 Gestures

I will set out to examine the role of physical gestures in *al-ghazal al-‘udhri*¹, ‘which expressively hovers between act and language, foregrounds language, self–division between muteness and communication, errancy and truth, unmeaning and meaning’². Glances, sighs, and smell are frequently depicted as channels of communication between the lovers. The Arabic treatises on love identify both the idea of longing looks that lead to love in the first place, and also as gestures that are essential for communication between the lovers. At the same time, the question of the theological legality of looking at women was not forgotten such discussions. In his attempt to define the conversation and glances between men and women, al-Jaḥīẓ provides many anecdotes to show that it was not shameful for women to converse with men or to exchange glances. All his examples, he says, give lie to the tradition reported by ḥashwīyah according to which the first glance is licit but the second is illicit³. To support his view, al-Jaḥīẓ says: ‘Up to our day, women who are daughters or mothers of the caliph or even of less exalted rank perform the circumambulation of the Ka‘bah with their faces uncovered and that condition must be fulfilled in order that

---

¹ The reader should note that I am examining gestures from the point of view of body-language.
the pilgrimage be complete. However, those who took a stricter attitude referred to
the Qur’anic verse enjoining men and women to behave modestly and chastely and
included the advice that they ‘cast down their eyes’. Ibn Qayyim al-Jawziyyah
explains that ‘what the heart did not intend [the first glance, which occurs without
any intention] is not subject to punishment. But, if the person takes a second look [at
a woman] by intent, he sins’.

Nevertheless, in the typical adab books on love, the subject is seasoned with
piety. ‘The authors do not trouble themselves over the battle against desire hawa and
the terrible consequences of looking (...). They are doubtless in the habit of thinking
of the positive spiritual potentialities of human love’. Authors such as Ibn Da’udd
and Ibn Hazm tackle the issue of glances as a profound question in both causing as
well as increasing love. In Kitab al-zahrah glances are treated by Ibn Da’udd as the
first cause of love; the first chapter of al-zahrah is entitled ‘he whose glances are
many, his woes last long’. In the Ring of the Dove, Ibn Hazm demonstrates that
glances play an honorable part and achieve remarkable results in one chapter entitled
‘of hinting with the eyes’. He states that ‘by means of a glance, the lover can be
dismissed, admitted, promised, threatened, upbraided, cheered, commanded or
forbidden’. Then, Ibn Hazm describes how even the most ordinary glances are
forms of expression. He also emphasises the function of the eye as a messenger:

4 Ibid., p. 18.
5 Al-Nur (24: 30-31).
chapters eight and nine of the Rawdah al-Muhibbin sets up the advocates of doctrines [that allowed
looking and easier standards of social and sexual conduct] like so many straw men to be knocked
down, reporting their teachings and providing evidence to prove them wrong. Ibn al-Jawzi, likewise,
devoted almost ten chapters of his book, Dhamm al-Hawa, to this matter, emphasising the importance
of the eyes as the gateway to dangerous sense impressions. Giffen, pp. 126-127.
7 Giffen, p. 132.
8 Ibn Hazm, p. 68.
You should realize that the eye takes the place of a messenger, and that
with its aid all the beloved’s intention can be apprehended. The four
senses besides are also gateways of the heart, and passages giving
admission to the soul; the eye is however the most eloquent, the most
expressive, and the most efficient of them all. The eye is the true
outrider and faithful guide of the soul; it is the soul’s well-polished
mirror, by means of which it comprehends all truths, attains all
qualities, and understands all sensible phenomena.9

Regarding *al-ghazal al-‘udhri*, it is stated in Majnūn’s romance that ‘In the
beginning of his affair, Majnūn used to see Laylā and frequent her company as well
as have close ties with her. Then she was made to disappear from his gaze10. This
text, by al-Iṣfahānī, uses the word ‘*naẓirih*’ for “his gaze”. So, the first stage in this
text is *nazar*; then *nazar* becomes *ru’yah*, and then, as the rest of the text suggests, it
became *ru’ya* when Majnūn reached the state of madness and *huyām*. The writer
implies here that Majnūn’s love for Laylā was caused by their visual communication
and conversation. ‘His intimacy with her is deviant. Since the origin of this intimacy
lies in his image of her through his eyes, her image must be made to vanish from his
gaze’, from his *nazar*, but it did not vanish from his heart when *ru’yah* was
transformed into *ru’ya* which is the stage of his suffering.

It was this specific part of the conversation and glances in Majnūn’s romance
which incited some authors, such as Ibn al-Jawzī to criticise Majnūn and take him as
an example of the dangers which lie in the glances between men and women as well
as in their conversation. Ibn al-Jawzī argues that this practice ‘worked insidious harm
to Majnūn and others like him, driving them mad and destroying them in the end.

9 Ibn Hazm, pp. 68-96. Interestingly, in medieval Western literature similar attention was paid to the
gestures between the lovers. Boncompagno wrote *da Signa*, which is a medieval taxonomy of lovers’
gestures. He begins by listing the four lovers’ signs: the nod, indication, signal, and sigh. For more
details see Hermann, p. 144.
They erred, he says, in that such behavior is against both human nature and the sacred law."11

However, in Majnūn’s poetry, looking and glances function in several ways; it was sometimes relief for the tortured heart:

Were our eyes to meet then all would be well
And the troubles would be lifted from my heart12

He also says:

I gave her a look that I would not exchange
For all the red and black camels of the land13

When the lovers’ eyes meet, they magically cure each other’s troubled hearts. A kind of wīṣāl is reached. Hence, those precious glances are more valuable to Majnūn than anything else, even ‘the red or black camels’. Glances could also be a suitable channel of communication between the lovers in a society full of blamers and wushāḥ:

When she looks my way her eyes speak to me
and my eyes reply while we remain silent
One of them tells me I will meet her
while the other almost leaves me dead14

Glances could express great contrasts of meaning in these ‘visual conversations’.

Although their tongues were silent, the outer angle of her eye would ‘speak’ and his would ‘answer’. One glance is promising and it announces a meeting, another might lead to death. The role played by the eyes in Majnūn’s poetry is pivotal, so some of his verses read:

I was prevented from greeting her the day of her departure,
so I saw her off with the angle of my eye which was in tears
And I was speechless to answer her
Who has ever seen a lover in tears bidding farewell to his heart15

---

12 Majnun, p. 229.
13 Ibid., p. 75.
14 Ibid., p. 55.
Here, the gaze functions as an index in a system of gestural codes. It is not just Majnūn, but his beloved, Laylā herself, who is said to have recited the following verses to him:

Both of us appear in front of people  
To hate each other  
And yet each is entrenched with his friend  
The secrets of the glances are not hidden  
If the eyes disclose what he conceals

Similarly, Jamīl’s glances convey messages between himself and Buthaynah:

But the glances we exchanged were as messengers,  
which conveyed what our hearts conceal

So here, the two lovers rely upon the gesture of looking to conceal as well as to reveal. Furthermore, ‘love has involved the composition of demeanour to mislead others, turning facial expression into a misleading sign written upon the body itself’.

Jamīl says:

When you come to me then control your eyes  
For our love is obvious to one who has vision  
And turn away if you meet an eye you fear  
And exhibit hate – that is more secret  
But when you come you always move your eyes towards me,  
So that your love nearly becomes manifest

‘Just as the corporeal image of holding the tongue metaphorises the suppression of speech, the gestures and movement of the eyes represent expression of speech’.

Kuthayyir declares:

---

15 Majnūn, p. 145.  
17 Jamīl, p. 47  
18 Hermann, pp. 154-155.  
19 Jamīl, p. 42. In another context the poet-lover Wādīḏāh al-Yemen depicts the gestures between him and a married woman in a more scandalous image for the time, saying: I crept to her silently after her husband fell asleep and the night was cold  
And her hand was her husband’s pillow  
She gave me a sigh out of the corner of her eye saying:  
Welcome, welcome, you will have what you desire despite all the calumniators  
(cited in Kinany, p. 206).  
20 Khan, p. 161.
So I swore never to forget ‘Azza’s glance;
I almost exposed my stammering passion on the night
when their eyes were upon us
and she gave me a sign with her hand that I must not speak.

It is noteworthy that in all these verses by ‘udhri poets cited above that the eyes function as a metaphor for language. Khan notes that Majnun’s romance

rehearses for us how the body (eyes) functions as metaphor for language: the imaging (secretion) and conveying (revealing) of the lover’s desire that occurs through the eyes metaphorises language’s capacity for constituting and conducting desire. Majnun glances at Layla generate desire in him yet his eyes also betray to others his infatuation for her. Language and gaze are both causes and stages of the love-quest. In the medieval Arabic discourse on love, the glance (lahza) could actually be interpreted as a metaphor for word or expression (lafza). Both words and glances have the same function in that they generate desirable images in the mind.

The sudden glimpse of the beloved could have a great effect on the lover. ‘Urwha expresses his feelings in such a situation:

It is just that, as soon as I see her, unexpectedly,
I am struck dumb, so that I can hardly answer;
I abandon any ideas that I might have had before
and forget whatever I had resolved when she was absent.
My heart shows to me her excuse and assists her
against myself: I am not longer master over my heart.

Once again, glances are a substitution for conversation. So ‘Urwha ‘can hardly answer’. He is moved by the sight of his beloved to the extent that he forgets whatever he ‘had resolved when she was absent’. This scene of desire and destruction in these verses is caused entirely by his gaze. It is the gaze of the lover at the beloved that smites his own heart; he is no longer master of his heart. Thus, it

21 Kuthayyir, p. 197.
22 Khan, p. 156.
24 In an anecdote cited in Rawdat al-muhibbin, the idea of the one being smitten by his own gaze is evident. Al-‘Asma’i was reported to have told the following anecdote: during the circumambulation of the Ka’bah, I saw a girl who was like a wild cow and I began to watch her and to fill my eye with her beauty. Then she said to me: ‘Hey you! What is the trouble with you?’ ‘What is it to you if I look at you?’ I said. Then she recited:
And you, when you sent your eye scouting for your heart one day,
could be argued that in the ‘udhrī tradition, the representation of the lover’s gaze can be the subject or the object between male and female characters. Moreover, keeping the aforementioned verses by Jamīl and Kuthayyir in mind, the interchange occurs as a shared gaze between the two lovers.

Glances relate to the poetic image of piercing. The eye of the beloved reaches the lover’s and reaches his heart through a glance. There is a familiar conceit in the Arabic ghazal: the lover’s or the beloved’s gaze that penetrates as an arrow, through the eye, to wound the heart. This conceit establishes the link between gazes and death. Abu al-Ṭayyib al-Mutanabbi’s verse reads:

It is me whose eye outer angle evoked fatality,  
Thus, who is the enquirer, when the victim is the killer?

Khalīl al-Ṣafadi in Sharḥ ḥamyyiat al-‘Ajām says, commenting on al-Mutanabbi’s verse:

Hence, look at how Abu al-Ṭayyib claimed that the eye is behind the evocation of fatality. According to all poets, it is the eye which is guilty, because, with its capacity of seeing, the eye leads to the annihilation of the heart. Poetry books, however, are full of such meaning and it is well-known enough and needs no more quotations to prove it.

Indeed, as al-Ṣafadi declares, poetry books are full of such meaning.

Imru’ al-Qays, for example, says:

---

Saw something over the whole of which you did not have power,  
Nor with part of which were you able to rest content  

25 On the contrary, in Medieval Western narratives, Stanbury argues, ‘the sight lines of desire are most often projected by a male viewer’. A growing body of research has demonstrated that ‘in Western culture this aggressive masculine eye dates from at least the classical era’. Sarah Stanbury, “The Lover’s Gaze in Troilus and Criseyde”, in Chaucer’s Troilus and Criseyde Essays in Criticism, ed. R. A. Shoaf (New York: Medieval and Renaissance Texts and Studies, 1992), p. 228.

26 It is noteworthy that, in Medieval Western literature a similar conceit of the gaze as an arrow is a familiar one. For example, in a roundel ascribed to Chaucer the beloved’s gaze sends a dart that penetrates to wound the heart. Stanbury, p. 226.


Your eyes only shed those tears so as to strike and pierce
With those two shafts of theirs the fragments of a ruined heart[29]

The famous verses of the poet Jarîr read:

The eyes whose corners are white have slain us
And then do not bring our dead to life again
They fell the man of wit and leave him motionless,
While they are the weakest of God’s creation[30]

The ‘udhrī poet Qays Lubna declares, moreover:

If I die, then seek blood requital from every virgin girl
With languid eyelids and listless eyes[31]

The murderous glance is associated with the image of the beloved as a gazelle in several lines of classical Arabic poetry. For example, al-ʿAbbas b. al-Ahñaf says:

A fawn (rîm) shot with its eyeballs, aiming at my heart,
my heart's hunter, whose ransom and protector I am[32]

In another verse by the same poet the mere appearance of the gazelle makes the hunter die:

How could a man as powerless as the like of me hunt
a gazelle which kills those who behold her[33]

Regarding the connotations of the metaphor of the female gazelle and her “murderous glances”, Bürgel explains that this animal can ‘evoke an uncanny feeling, due to its close links with the realm of fairies and demons’[34]. Through several examples, he shows how the gazelle was sacred among ancient Arabs, the image traditionally holding a sense of magic and numinosity. Indeed, this reminds us of the magical power ascribed to the beloved, especially in Majnûn’s poetry. Therefore, the gazelle metaphor ‘expresses the strange mixture of fear and

[31] Qays, p. 46.
[34] Ibid., p. 8.
fascination evoked by the irritating fusion of weakness and power in woman.\textsuperscript{35}

Bürgel maintains that love poetry

created a realm where woman existed not only unsubdued but ruling, even tyrannically, and yet adored. This realm is that of an ideal love, somewhat crazy, somewhat perverse, it is true, but with all the features of an elaborate system like a philosophy and indeed a religion, the religion of love, in which man adores a Lady Gazelle and willingly submits to her whims, even to the extent of being killed by her murderous glances.\textsuperscript{36}

In a previous chapter, the significance of the beloved’s smell as shown in \textit{al-ghazal al-‘udhrī} was noted. Here, however, I would argue that this odour, carried by the zephyrs, is also depicted in ‘\textit{udhrī} poetry as a channel to communicate with the beloved. Kuthayyir declares:

\begin{quotation}
The east wind brings her scent to me every night
And we are together in our dreams wherever we sleep\textsuperscript{38} [16]
\end{quotation}

Majnūn also says:

\begin{quotation}
If ever riders come from near his land he breathes
in seeking relief from the scent of the riders\textsuperscript{39} [17]
\end{quotation}

The smell, even from the beloved’s land or direction is depicted as a cure from the agony of ardent love. Therefore, the body of the beloved is presented in \textit{al-ghazal al-‘udhrī} through symbolic channels both of gestures and smell. Its presence is also depicted through speech as we shall see in the following section.

\textbf{5.2.2 Speech}

Jamīl’s famous verse reads:

\begin{quotation}
Women’s converse is (\textit{bashāshah}) real bliss
And women’s victims are martyrs\textsuperscript{40} [18]
\end{quotation}

\begin{itemize}
  \item \textsuperscript{35} Ibid, p. 9.
  \item \textsuperscript{36} Ibid, p. 10.
  \item \textsuperscript{37} See the chapter “The Representation of The Beloved’s Body” of this study, p. 107.
  \item \textsuperscript{38} Kuthayyir, p. 86.
  \item \textsuperscript{39} Majnun, p. 45.
\end{itemize}
In this verse, Jamīl signifies the importance of the conversation with the beloved in *al-ghazal al-‘udhri*. His use of the word ‘*bashashah*’ is significant as it alludes to joy and happiness. In another verse he says, addressing Buthaynah:

She is beautiful, smiling,
Her speech resembles a string of pearls, unloosed and scattered.  

Here, Jamīl uses the metaphor ‘a string of pearls, unloosed and scattered’ to describe the beauty of Buthaynah’s speech. ‘This metaphor is a play upon that often employed by medieval Arab critics in describing poetry as “a string of pearls”’

It is perhaps not surprising that we find so many allusions in *al-ghazal al-‘udhri* to women’s speech and the joy of conversation between the women and their lovers. Al-Jāhīz states clearly that this kind of conversation was common among Bedouin men and women:

Among Bedouin men and women there was no veiling of women; yet in spite of the absence of the veil, they disapproved of sly glances and secret ogling. Nevertheless, they were accustomed to foregather for conversation and evening parties, and might pair off for whispering and joking (the man who was addicted to this being termed *Zīr*, [a word] derived from [the verb meaning] to visit). All this will take place under the eyes of the women’s guardians or in the presence of her husband, without these taking exception to conduct not in itself exceptionable, provided they felt secure against any misbehaviour occurring.

Moreover, he also states that such conversations were the cause of the passion between ‘*udhri* lovers:

Men continued to hold converse with women both in pre-Islam and [in the beginning of] Islam, up to the time when the veil was imposed as a particular duty on the wives of the prophet. Such converse was the cause of the association between Jamīl and Buthaynah, ‘Afra and ‘Urwh, Kuthayyir and ‘Azzah, Qays and Lubna, Asma and Muraqqish, Abdallah b. ‘Ajlān and Hind. Moreover, noble ladies used...
to sit and talk to men, and for them to look at each other was neither shameful in pre-Islam nor illicit in Islam.

In Ibn Qutaybah’s ‘Uyun al-akhbar, a chapter is devoted to ‘the discourse of women’, in which the author presents an abundance of romanticized tropes to describe the words of women as they appear in Arabic poetry. For example, Ibn Qutaybah quotes Ibn al-A‘rabi’s verse:

Her speech is like a shower of saving rain heard by a shepherd
After long years of drought
Who faints wishing to live and out of joy says ‘more, O Lord.’

And he also quotes Bashshar b. Burd’s verses:

As Harut delivers his magic in her tongue
And her speech is like flowers in verdant meadows.

Therefore, women’s words are like ‘a flow of clouds’ and ‘flowers in verdant meadows’. In other verses that Ibn Qutaybah provides, women’s words are like ‘the glitter of gold and silver’ and ‘a string of pearls, unloosed and scattered’ and ‘honeyed wine’. Khan argues that:

Women’s words, like their bodies, are objectified as ornaments of seduction and deceptive allurement. The analogy between their words and ornaments is important. This analogy suggests how, by making signification ascribed to women’s words suspect and ambiguous, their language is rendered enigmatic and secretive.

In ‘udhrī tradition there are many references to the conversation, which is considered a kind of wisāl with the beloved. In many senses the ‘udhrī lover is portrayed as incapable of withstanding the beauty or the lethal effect of his beloved’s words. In one account given by Ibn Qutaybah, Jamīl and a friend of his went to Buthaynah’s campsite. Hearing of his arrival, she came out accompanied by other women to meet

---

44 Ibid., p.17.
46 Ibid., p. 83
47 Ibid., pp. 82-83.
48 Khan, p. 154.
him. They all sat together to talk and after a while the women left the two lovers alone. They spent the whole night talking until the morning, when they had to bid farewell to each other. When Jamīl was about to mount his camel, Buthaynah asked him to come close to her, which he did. She whispered something to him which caused him to faint and then she left. When he finally woke up he recited:

Neither a storm cloud in a heavy millstone,
Nor what bees keep in their stores
Are sweeter than what you said
After the saddle was placed on the breast of my camel

The loss of control by fainting can be seen as a metaphor for reaching the height of desire. Manzalaouni has pointed out that in the later collection of stories, The Thousand and One Nights, ‘the mutuality of the simultaneous faint is the sentimental romance’s surrogate for sexual intercourse’. The pure water, ‘a storm cloud in a heavy millstone’, is a metaphor for the beloved’s speech, it is ‘a flow of clouds’ in the aforementioned verse by Ibn al-‘Ara‘ī. And so the dual nature of thirst and the quenching of thirst arises again in al-ghazal al-‘udhrī. It is not just kisses from the beloved’s delicious mouth that quenches the poet’s thirst; but also her sweet words.

In a similar context, al-Qutāmī, the Umayyad poet, declares:

They kill us by a talk
that is not known to whom they are scared of
and what is hidden of this talk
is not obvious to others.
This is so because their talk
is like water
for a thirsty person

---

49. Ibn Qutaybah, al-Shi‘r wa al-shu‘ārā‘, p. 438. A similar version of the story is given in Tazyīn al-aswaq, in which Jamīl described Buthaynah’s speech as more delicious than the pure rain water in high mountains, p. 63.
Back to Jamīl’s verse: ‘not even whatever bees hid in their dwellings’, we notice here how Jamīl uses the image of the luscious honey produced by bees in reference to the sweet words that his beloved hides and tells only to him. This image directs us to a similar one related also to the beloved’s mouth; it is the image of the luscious honey of her saliva. It is the honey that the poet receives or wishes to receive while kissing the beloved. Therefore, can we suggest that the mouth area is presented in the ‘udhri poetry as a desirable area, either in the physical form, i.e. in kissing, or in the immaterial form, i.e. in speaking? The image of the beloved’s ‘honeyed speech’ or being even more luscious than honey, is very popular in Arabic classical poetry. Abū Hayyiah al-Numayrī refers to the capacity of the beloved’s speech in curing not only sickness but even for saving one from the last inhalations of death.

Another anecdote from the ‘udhri tradition shows how Majnūn was fond of women’s conversation. The anecdote also reveals his extreme reaction to Laylā’s words. Ibn Qutaybah provides the following anecdote about Majnūn:

He would sit and talk to her among some of his people. Handsome and gracious, he was brilliant in conversation and poetic recitation. But she would shun him and converse with others, to the point where he was hurt. When she realized that, she turned to him and said:

In front of other people, we both display hatred,
While each of us is entrenched in the other’s heart
Things worsened for him so much that his reason left him, and he wandered aimlessly with the wild beasts.

In this anecdote, Majnūn is portrayed as a man who takes pleasure both in listening to women’s conversation and in reciting poetry to them. But what do the women’s words in general, and Laylā’s in particular, signify? The narrative, as Khan notes,

---

52 ‘Then to eat of all the produce (of the earth), and find with skill the spacious paths of its Lord: there issues from within their bodies a drink of varying colours, wherein is healing for men: verily in this is a Sign for those who give thought’. Al-Nahl (16: 69).
53 See his verses cited in Salamah, p. 352.
ascribed to this discourse a role in the genesis of male desire. Women’s speech reflects poetic speech and mirrors it, which is why he is so fond of hearing their words\textsuperscript{55}. So the male poet’s listening is not so much an act of hearing the women’s speech as one of hearing his own words reflected in her language. His attention to her words is thus ultimately a self-referential activity\textsuperscript{56}. Nevertheless, Majnūn’s excessive reaction to Laylā’s verses is significant. It provokes an even more public display from him\textsuperscript{57}.

In his treatise about love, \textit{The Ring of the Dove}, Ibn Ḥazm considers conversation as the first device employed by those who seek union:

> The first device employed by those who seek union, being lovers, in order to disclose their feeling to the object of their passion, is allusion by means of words. Either they will quote a verse of poetry, or despatch an allegory, or rhyme a riddle, or propose an enigma, or use heightened language\textsuperscript{58}.

Sometimes, it seems that the content of the beloved’s speech does not matter to the poet. Just the mere fact that she actually spoke to him, even if only to curse him, is what matters because all the beloved’s talk is beloved. Jamīl illustrates this by saying:

> Buthayna has said it,  
> And all of her words to me are sweet even if she speaks ill\textsuperscript{59}  

He also says:

> A false word from one whose speech I love,  
> is more precious to me than one I hate speaking the truth\textsuperscript{60}  

\textsuperscript{55} Khan, p. 152.  
\textsuperscript{56} \textit{Ibid.}, p. 153.  
\textsuperscript{57} Khan, p. 157.  
\textsuperscript{58} Ibn Ḥazm, p. 65.  
\textsuperscript{59} Jamīl, p. 113.  
\textsuperscript{60} \textit{Ibid.}, p. 87.
In some contexts when the choice is made between actual physical touch and a woman’s whisper, the poet confesses that whispers bring him the greatest pleasure: ‘Umar b. Abī Rabī‘ah claims: ‘I was in between two women, one was whispering to me and the other was biting me, yet I could not feel the bite for the enjoyment of the other’s whisper overwhelmed it’\textsuperscript{61}.

Also, the enjoyment of talking to the beloved sometimes refers to the purity of relations between the ‘udhri poets and their beloved. In numerous narratives, the lovers get together and talk until morning. A verse by Jamīl describes a similar desire:

I know nothing of what lies beneath her clothes, 
nor have I ever kissed her, 
I have never touched her. 
We just talked and were lost in each other’s eyes\textsuperscript{62} \[26\]

‘Talking and looking’ in contrast to the actual physical interaction; looking which does not exceed the edges of the outer dress, and speaking, from the mouth that he has not tested. Nevertheless, Jamīl composed other verses that could be seen as challenging this purported link between conversation and chastity. For example, in one verse, he links his beloved’s words and her saliva:

Ah me! Shall we ever spend another night like our night until we see the rising of the dawn; 
she showering her words upon me, 
and oft times showering her saliva upon me from her mouth?\textsuperscript{63} \[27\]

The first verse recalls a similar one of Majnūn, in which he also links the conversation with his beloved to the night:

Ah me! Shall I ever spend the night whispering to you 
until I behold the rise of the dawn\textsuperscript{64} \[28\]

\textsuperscript{62} Jamīl, p. 49.
\textsuperscript{63} Jamīl, p. 38.
Beyond their descriptions of their beloveds’ speech as pure water and honey, ‘Udhri poets also ascribe extraordinary effects to their words. Majnūn claims:

If I were blind, walking using a stick, and deaf when she calls me, I would respond to her.

Jamīl also expresses a peculiar wish:

I wish I were blind and deaf while Buthaynah is guiding me, not a word from her speech is hidden from me!

There is an insistence on Buthaynah’s words not being hidden from him. Her words could act place of his sight and hearing. Furthermore, love at a distance, as Bouhdiba demonstrates, is based almost exclusively on hearing or hearsay and is fed on fantasy. The famous verse by Bashshār b. Burd reads: ‘Sometimes the ear falls madly in love before the eye’. In any case, these kinds of verses incite al-Washshāʾ to comment on them by saying:

They [the poets] claim that women’s speech is a cure for blindness, and it makes the deaf hear, and enlives the dead, and raises people from graves before their due time. Some Bedouin said: Some of women’s speech is like water that quenches thirst.

Moreover, ‘udhri poets claim that the beloved’s words could affect even the non-human world. Majnūn, for instance, maintains:

You kept me close until you put a spell on me with words that bring the mountain-goats down to the plains When I had no way out, you shunned me, But you left what you left within my breast.

He also says:

If she called to the doves they would answer her And were she to speak to the dead they would speak back to her.

---

64 Majnūn, p. 114. 
65 Majnūn, p.234. 
67 Bouhdiba, p.39. 
"al-Washshā, p. 91. 
70 Majnūn, p. 64
Kuthayyir depicts his beloved’s speech in a similar image:

And if Umm al-Walîd were to talk to the mountain goats on mount Raḍwâ‘,
They would draw near to her and come down to her
From the mountain passes of Da’s and Aylah
Even when the hunter is there with his dogs

In these verses the poets use the words: qawl, ḥadīthaha, kallamat which indicate that it is not just the sound, but that the beloved’s words and speech are magical.

Both poets use the image of ‘usm, the mountain-goat, which belong to the pricket (wa‘l) species that always stay in the mountains and never venture down to the plains. So, the effect of the beloved’s speech goes beyond the poet himself, to embrace other creatures. Her speech is powerful enough to make the wild mountain-goats relinquish their well-fortified location and descend to the plains. Here, these animals could even recklessly ignore the surrounding dangers like the intimidating hunting dogs. The amusements these aloof animals find in her speech leads to their ‘rapprochement’ and make them ‘descend’, transforming any aloofness into a world of amiability.

5.3 Bodily Absence

5.3.1 The Phantom of the Beloved

The phantom of the beloved (tayf al-khayāl) is a ‘constantly mentioned convention of amatory preludes’ in classical Arabic qasīdah. It could be defined as a ‘vision of

---

71 Ibid., p. 200.
72 Kuthayyir, p. 42.
the beloved appearing by night. Ṭayf is a verbal noun deriving from ʿaṭṭa/yatīfū, ‘to appear [in sleep, phantom]’, while the second form of the verb, ʿaṭṭa, means ‘to circuit, go around. The verb ʿaṭṭa is used to describe the phantom’s night visit. Khayāl derives from khaṭṭa/yakhaṭlu, ‘to think, suppose, fancy, imagine’. So, Ṭayf al-khayaḥ is purely imaginary, an imaginative projection in a dream or dream-like state. In classical Arabic, qasīdah the phantom of the beloved functions as an abandoned campsite that arouses the poet’s emotions. Some scholars have drawn a distinction between ṭayf and khayāl based on their linguistic origins and their literary use. However, it is remarkable that it is a traditional literary convention to use a combination of the two words for the term ṭayf al-khayaḥ. For example, Jamīl uses both terms in different contexts while Majnūn focuses on the word khayāl, which will be highlighted in this section. Jacobi notes that:

[Tayf al-khayaḥ] was first conceived as an apparition or ghost, confronting the poet in the external world, not always welcome, and sometimes even terrifying him. Later, from the early seventh century onwards, it was referred to as a vision the poet sees in his dream, longed for and fulfilling his secret wishes, granting favours the beloved herself refused.

Clearly, ṭayf al-khayaḥ acts as a symbol of the beloved’s bodily presence, thereby indicating her absence. As soon as ṭayf al-khayaḥ reaches the lover, it arouses his hidden yearning and sadness; Kuthayyir expresses the effect that ‘Azzah’s phantom had on him:

Khayāl from ‘Azzah’ has passed (ṭaḥ)

---

76 Seybold, p. 182.
78 Ibid., p. 106.
79 Jacobi, p. 2.
by in the dark and during still times and has stimulated my grief and her khayal has deranged all way from Buwayb to reach Thi‘dawra‘ni 80

*Tayf* al-khayal only passes by night. Khuthayyir further explains by using “ba‘d al-hudw” which indicates times of tranquillity and stillness. That is because tranquillity and darkness allow for the revelation of the beloved’s phantom, which evokes his grief and brings forth memories, along with the nostalgic wish to relive the past which can only be achieved through dreams and imagination. It is also remarkable that the poet uses the verb “*tayfa*” meaning “passed” when describing the phantom’s visit to him because this verb is itself derived from the noun *tayf* which has often been used by poets to evoke feelings of fear, insecurity or even suspicion towards nature 81. In addition, some ‘udhrī poets link the noun *tayf* with Jinn in their usage of terms like “*tayf Jinnah*” or “*ta‘if Jinnah*” - Urwah, for instance, says:

I am not mad, I have no jinn inside me.  
It’s this, my friend: my uncle has belied me 82

Qays says, addressing Lubnā:

Your *tayf* has visited me in the evening and caused me insomnia  
So I dropped endless tears 83

Also in his speech, *tayf* is linked to the night, causing sadness and continual tears, and eventually preventing the poet from sleeping, as if this symbiosis of the beloved with the *tayf* indicates the absence of her physical body and the impossibility of her physical presence except through symbolism and the imagination.. The poet’s grief over her absence is reflected in flowing tears. The *tayf* visits the poet during his

---

80 Kuthayyir, p. 235. *Buwayb* and *Thi‘dawra‘ni* are names of places.
81 *Aṣu‘luk* poet’s mother says after his death:

“He traversed the land seeking safety from death but he died.”
83 Qays, p. 109.
sleep only to fade away when he awakes; therefore, ‘sleeplessness is a keyword, a prerequisite for the appearance of the phantom’\textsuperscript{84}. A subsequent poet, Jarīr, uses a similar image of a phantom of the beloved visiting at night, yet he links it with the motif of ʿtalāf:

\begin{verbatim}
Is it the phantom of Khālidah
Coming through the night?
No looming shape [campsite ruin] could I see dearer
Than such a nightly vision\textsuperscript{85} [37]
\end{verbatim}

In other situations, ʿtāf al-khayał does not pay the poet a direct visit, but rather makes a long journey that starts from the actual location of the physical presence of the beloved to reach the actual location of the poet. In other words, the beloved’s body symbolically turns into khayał that takes on the journey on her behalf, as Jamīl Buthaynah says:

\begin{verbatim}
khayał from Buthaynah has haunted me,
Longing for me and agitating my longing
It has penetrated through Tilaʾ al-ḥijr and reached me
Despite al-Ashʿarūn and Ghafiq in between\textsuperscript{86} [38]
\end{verbatim}

The power that his beloved lacks to take such a long journey and to cross Tilaʾ al-ḥijr to reach the location of the poet is further hindered by al-Ashʿarūn and Ghafiq, her ʿtāf al-khayał possesses this power instead \textsuperscript{87}. The question of how her khayał was able to reach the poet in spite of the distance is hardly relevant within the context of

\textsuperscript{84} John Seybold, p. 184.
\textsuperscript{86} Jamīl, p. 68.
\textsuperscript{87} Since Pre-Islamic times, poets have expressed their surprise at the phantom’s “courage” and ability to travel so far in order to reach the poet. See, for example, Ṭarafah b. al-ʿAbd, \textit{Diwan} (Beirut: Dār Beirut li al tībāʿah wa al-nashr, 1979), p. 76. The phantom is also connected with the idea of travel from afar: al-Muraqqish al-Akbar says: At night a phantom came from Sulayma
And kept me awake while my companions slept
I spent the night revolving the matter in my mind every which way
Awaiting her people though they are far away
dreams, but it gives the *khayāl* more reality and even more substance\textsuperscript{88}. Jamīl here uses the verb “haunted” and Salāmah notes that the poet’s use of this verb is quite normal to describe the *tayf* of the beloved as it is the same verb associated with the Jinn and the *ta’īf* of the Jinn. It is also linked to other names of love like *mass* and *lamam*. So, the lover goes insane because he falls in love with a human that resembles a Jinni\textsuperscript{89}. Regardless of the jinni-like power that characterise this *tayf*, it is described using the same terms as those used to describe the beloved like “longing” and “agitates longing”. In any case, the distance that the phantom overrides is paradoxical; Seybold argues that:

> The lady is far away while her phantom is near. Distance is nearly always spatial, and the phantom’s triumph is finding the right way over endless rough terrain. But distance also has a temporal dimension: the lady exists in the past as a memory while the phantom appears in the present as a desire. Simultaneously far and near, past and present—again, two views of a single reality\textsuperscript{90}.

Janīl Buthaynah expresses his surprise by the phantom’s night visit while he was asleep:

> O Buthaynah, does your phantom *tayf* visit me gently in sleep?  
> And my heart was inflamed with longing and it poured forth  
> I was astonished that it would visit my bed in sleep,  
> and were it to visit me awake it would be more astonishing\textsuperscript{91} 

Particularly fascinating in these verses is the key verb *sara*, ‘to travel by night’, which is used to describe the phantom’s night visit. In contrary with Seybold’s argument I will maintain that *tayf al-khayāl* is portrayed as a visitor while the poet is asleep, not only when he is awake. As seen in Janīl’s verses cited above, Jamīl clearly says that Buthaynah’s *tayf* visited him while he was asleep, though in the last verse he includes not only *tayf al-khayāl* but also the actual figure of Buthaynah

\textsuperscript{88} Jacobi, p. 2.  
\textsuperscript{89} Salamah, pp. 189-190.  
\textsuperscript{90} Seybold, p. 185.  
\textsuperscript{91} Jamil, p. 19.
when he says: ‘and were it to visit me awake it would be more astonishing’. The real meeting arouses his surprise because of the distance between himself and Buthaynah, so he is only hoping to meet her phantom by trying to sleep, even though he is not sleepy:

Although I am not sleepy,  
I am trying to be drowsy,  
Hoping to meet her in my sleep\(^\text{92}\)  
[40]

A similar verse is attributed to Majnūn:

I cover my head with my garment,  
Although I am not sleepy,  
Perhaps a \textit{khayal} from you will meet my \textit{khayal}\(^\text{93}\)  
[41]

Al-Sharīf al-Murtada (d. 1044) in his monograph \textit{tayf al-khayal}, describes the second \textit{khayal} in Majnūn’s verse as the poet’s emaciated body\(^\text{94}\). However, \textit{tayf al-khayal} becomes a means of realising dreams that are unachievable in reality because desires become real in dreams:

Have I seen you Laylā in my night dreams,  
or during my day where I have witnesses?  
I have held you close to me until I thought  
My fire was extinguished,  
But it wasn’t; it was instead agitating\(^\text{95}\)  
[42]

So, the appearing of \textit{tayf al-khayâl} is a result of longing and desire. The comparison between the gracious behaviour of the \textit{khayal} and the un-obliging attitude of the

\(^\text{92}\) Jamīl, p. 98. It is interesting that, among some other poets, there is a reference to more than one \textit{khayal} as the poet is involved in a love affair with two women, who send their \textit{khayal} at the same time. Al-‘Ajja b. Ru’bah says:

Two khayal moved about and caused affliction,  
The khayal (of a woman) named, and that (of a woman) kept secret  
See Jacobi’s discussion of the motif of khayalan, p. 3.


\(^\text{94}\) Jacobi, p. 5.

\(^\text{95}\) Majnun, p. 76.
beloved is implied in this verse. That shows that *tayf al-Khayāl* has not always been conceived as exactly the same thing.\(^{96}\)

Majnūn links the hindrance made by the society that prevents him from contacting his beloved to the inability of this society to prevent contact with her through her phantom and his imagination:

\[
\text{Since you deny me her words, why not forbid her image (khayāl) from coming freely to me, despite the distance?}\]

Unlike the beloved herself, her *khayāl* is capable of challenging all social and natural obstacles which hinder their meeting. This allows the poet to make contact with the *khayāl* that is almost equivalent to her own self. In *al-hawāmil wa al-shawāmil* by Abu Ḥayyān al-Tawhīdī (d.1023), the author presents a conversation between himself and Miskawayh (a philosopher) reveals. This dialogue is an attempt to comprehend the poets’ obsession with the phantom and its relation to the imagination, while the interlocutors try to understand the psychological role of the phantom in facing this longing.\(^{98}\)

Hence, using the *tayf* as a means to reach impossible dreams is a common trait of classical Arabic poetry. In a poem by Ḥusayn b. al-Dāhḥāk, he describes the visit of a gazelle’s *tayf* in the darkness, as if the gazelle was perfumed by odours and longing for the poet. The poet achieves his desire with the creature held out and acted flirtatiously.\(^{99}\) According to Abū Tammām, *tayf al-khayāl* visited him because of the poet’s own intention:

---

\(^{96}\) Jacobi, p. 2.  
\(^{97}\) Majnūn, cited and translated by Khairallah, p. 91.  
A khayāl from her visited (you),
No, but a thought caused you to visit it
When man sleeps, his mind does not sleep
A gazelle whom I caught, after I had set up for it,
Towards the end of the night, snares of dreams

Here, Jacobi observes, ‘the initiative rests with the poet; his intellectual and imaginative faculties are envisaged as a hunter chasing the khayāl and finally ensnaring it by dreams’. Nevertheless, sometimes tayf al-khayāl appears in classical poetry as a figure who is capable of anger. So, it would act as the beloved herself would do, Abū Nuwas says:

My tayf desired him in sleep, but he vanished,
And one day I kissed his shadow, but he blamed me for it

Moreover, the poet seems to be aware that tayf al-khayāl partly symbolises the beloved, but it is still just a dream which vanished when in the morning:

O you two lovers! You get reconciled in sleep,
And in the morning you are both angry again.
Such are dreams, they deceive us,
But it also happens that they come true

The phantom form of the beloved symbolises the absence of her body, and at the same time, it is capable of travelling long distances to reach the poet. It is also able to fulfil the desires that the beloved herself is unable to achieve.

5.3.2 The Place of the Beloved

Many of the dominant motifs in the nasīb, the opening section of the qaṣīdah, a classical Arabic poem, such as the ruined campsite, the beloved’s tayf and her departure, create a sense of longing and sorrow. The poet may elaborate on any of

---

100 Cited and translated by Jacobi, p. 8. It is noteworthy, however, that ‘the dream interpretations mentioned in al-Damiri’s gazelle chapter all refer to various kinds of appropriation of a woman: acquiring a gazelle through hunting means to become the owner of a slave-girl by way of a ruse or a fraud, or to marry a wife. Killing a gazelle means to deflower a slave girl etc’. (Burgel, “The Lady Gazelle and Her Murderous Glances”, p. 10).
101 Jacobi, p. 8.
103 Ibid., No. 318.
these motifs; Kuthayyir, the ‘udhri poet, preserved these conventions to express his yearning not just for his beloved, but also for her belongings and any traces of her. We come across lines in his poetry that explicitly relate ‘Azzah’s departure to his sorrow\textsuperscript{104}. As Stetkevych explains,

There are equally unending insistences on motifs of arrivals at abandoned campsites, of departures from the tribal grounds, of sorrow at such arrivals and departures and over the emptiness that always lies before and after them, and of the glimpse of happiness in between – just enough happiness to reduce everything else to unceasing yearning\textsuperscript{105}.

However, \textit{al-ghazal al-’udhri}, in general, divests itself from such motifs; visiting a place connected with the beloved replaces the scene of the poet halting at the ruined campsite, and this form of poetry does not generally have the motif of the departing woman. Moreover, the yearning for the place of the beloved is not limited to the opening section of the \textit{qaṣīdah} as, in a sense, the entire ‘udhri \textit{qaṣīdah} is a love \textit{qaṣīdah}. The representation of the place of the beloved in ‘udhri poetry indicates her absence, on the one hand, and the poet’s endeavour to overcome this absence, on the other. Her place acts as a symbol of her actual body; ‘Urwah, says conveying his longing to ‘Afra:\textsuperscript{106}

Do you every day aim for her country with eyes in which the pupils are drowning? O, carry me, may God bless you, to the settlement of \textit{al-Rawḥā}, and then leave me\textsuperscript{106}

Hence, the place of the beloved is portrayed in ‘udhri poetry as a symbol of her concrete presence. The body of the beloved is absent, and even its attributes such as gestures and speech are absent. The poet cannot surmount this absence, he cannot retrieve either his beloved, her actual figure, gestures and voice, and hence, he

\textsuperscript{104} See examples in his 	extit{Diwan} on pp. 64, 67, 78, 137, 145, 164 and 183.
\textsuperscript{105} Stetkevych, p. 103.
symbolises all these. Her absent body is represented by symbolic channels and in ‘udhri poetry it is her place or location that comes to replace the body. The place of the beloved is rendered as a substitute for her presence. Stones, walls and even traces in the sand are components that indicate her presence in the past despite her absence in the present. Pure absence can be observed in Majnūn’s verses:

O house
That I do not visit though this desertion is an offense (fault),
I desert you though I am longing and visit you though I am scared
And in you [house] observers watch me through time\(^{107}\) \[48\]

Majnūn uses the lexicon of ‘visit and desert’, ‘longing and observers’ to reveal his being torn between the absence and presence. The beloved’s presence is not real, but it becomes real in the form of something material such as her house. In Majnūn’s endeavour to surmount the total absence of his beloved and to gain her presence, he heads for her house, but he is unable to conquer this absence entirely as the observers ‘watch him through time’, so he is torn between visiting and deserting. In another verse, Kuthayyir reveals:

I turn away from your home while I madly long for you, Just to show gossipy people that I have deserted your home\(^{108}\) \[49\]

Other ‘udhri poets express the struggle to conceal their desire to visit their beloved’s places. They maintain that they would visit the houses of the beloved’s neighbours even if they do not like their inhabitants, while their hearts remain in the house that they are forced to abandon\(^{109}\). Because of a lack of social protection, the poet’s journey to his beloved becomes full of dangers. ‘The idea of the withdrawal of any social protection normally accorded to the individual is common to this restriction’\(^{110}\)

---

\(^{107}\) Majnūn, p. 28.
\(^{108}\) Kuthayyir, p. 99.
\(^{109}\) See, for instance, Kuthayyir, pp. 36, 103 and Jamīl, p. 48.
\(^{110}\) Khan, p. 189.
as one can observe in Qays and Jamīl’s stories. In the following verses Majnūn reproaches his friends for refusing to accompany him on his journey to see Laylā:

And should I leave Laylā
when there is nothing between me and her save one night journey;
Indeed I would then be patient
Assume that I am a man from among you who has led his camel astray
Yet he has a contract of protection,
Indeed this right due is great
But the friend who has been left behind is [surely] more of an obligation
Than [the case of] a camel going astray
May God forgive Layla today, indeed she has gone astray
[she has acted] wrongfully,
If she condemns me to die of love

It seems that Majnūn was aware of the grave dangers in visiting Laylā, but still the path to her is preferable for him. In other verses, Majnūn clearly maintains that he is not fond of the places themselves, but of who lives in them:

I pass by places (Laylā’s places) kissing this wall and that wall
Longing for she who lived in these places
Not the places themselves

The phrase ‘kissing this wall and that wall’ acts as a clear symbol of kissing the beloved herself. She is absent, so cannot be held or kissed, but the walls that enclosed her symbolise her body and act as a metaphor of her actual presence. In a poetic moment, Majnūn discovers that kissing the walls is in fact a questionable act so he tries to defend himself by declaring that he longs for she who lived in the places, and not for the places themselves. A similar idea may be found in Qays’s poetry; he declares that:

I am not fond of your homeland,
I am kissing the footprints of the one (his beloved)
who stepped over its soil

Kissing the beloved’s footprints indicates submission in love to the beloved to the extent of worship. Hence, the beloved is, as Majnūn claims, a creature made of light

112 Majnūn, pp. 127,128.
113 Qays, p. 19.
who, when stepping on the soil of the earth, makes it more aromatic, even years later. Qays explains his obsession as being with his beloved’s footprints rather than being in love with the earth itself. Thus, anything that the beloved touches or steps on becomes sacred and it becomes almost an obligation for the poet to touch and kiss it. Furthermore, Kuthayyir asks his companions:

My friends, this was the encampment of ‘Azzah
Stop and touch the earth which may have touched her skin
and remain spending the night where she stayed and spent the night
And do not doubt that God will forgive your sins,
if you pray where she prayed

Therefore the ‘udhri poet goes to extreme lengths in searching for the traces of his absent beloved. He has no doubts that God will forgive people’s sins if they follow his beloved and pray where she prayed. The place in which she once prayed, becomes the channel between the poet and God. Hence, the poet has no doubts that God will forgive his sins because of his love. Here we notice that the concept of place has different meanings in ‘udhri love, and through this we find the common element which brings the two bodies - the body of place and that of woman – together is the place. For ‘udhri poets there are two kinds of places; the material one and the abstract one. Both are intertwined in the ‘udhri poem.

Majnūn’s following verses ‘celebrates to an equal degree the beloved Laylā and Najd:

As nights go by, even as I despair of ever returning,
I yearn for Najd.
Were there no Laylā and no Najd, admit
That you’d forsake all till Judgment Day

114 Majnūn, p. 40
He also sang:

O East wind of the highlands,
When did you stir from Najd?
Your journey through the night
And passion upon passion add\(^{118}\)

Considering these and similar verses, Stetkevych has noted,

The Bedouin poet began possessing Tiḥāmā, Ḥijāz and above all, Najd, when he stepped out of them: and when he had lost these regions in the dispersion of the empire, these places, these names, then possessed him. Such possession implied the awareness of loss through the great paradox of nostalgic seizing of time—of time one once had and also of that much larger time to which one’s soul feels a compelling affinity, to which it must return because it itself is possessed\(^{119}\).

Indeed, ‘As landscape, Najd has been arrested and transformed in a poetic vision’\(^{120}\).

But, especially for Majnūn, the Najd signifies the path to the beloved. Khan observes that the depiction of Majnūn as lost in the space between two opposing geographical peripheries, without being able to find a way out, mirrors his spiritual and moral bewilderment. His geographic roaming from al-Shām to al-Yemen ‘symbolises not just the fluctuations (lows and highs) in his myriad other states of being out but also foregrounds his spiritual and moral liminality’\(^{121}\). The contours of a terrestrial topography, Khan continues, take on a linguistic and sexual significance.

Linguistically, the wandering of the poet towards Najd symbolises the proclivity of ‘udhri\(^{122}\) verse for revelation since Najd also means ‘the manifest or visible’. So Majnūn’s roaming between al-Shām and al-Yemen ‘can symbolically be interpreted as evidence for the dialectic of secrecy and revelation that characterizes ‘udhri

\(^{118}\) Majnūn, p. 79, trans. Stetkevych, p. 116. This verse is also ascribed to the poet Ibn al-Dumaynah.
\(^{119}\) Stetkevych, p. 116.
\(^{120}\) Stetkevych, p. 117. He also argues that later poets will reduce the Najd motif to its purely abstract, symbolic value. It will be the aim and the road of all yearning, p. 118. See his discussion of the symbolic crystallization of Najd on pp. 119-121.
\(^{121}\) Khan, pp. 183-184.
romance\textsuperscript{122} since al-Shām is identified as the highland, whereas al-Yemen is described as the hidden lowland. Jamīl’s story, likewise, contains this dialectic of al-Shām and Najd. In one of his verses he declares:

\begin{quote}
My heart sinks when she leaves
And when she is in Najd my heart yearns for Najd\textsuperscript{123}
\end{quote}

There are many associations between land and the dialectic of revelation and secrecy in the Arabic language\textsuperscript{124}. Majnūn’s roaming also represents the tragic wandering of his desire; Khan argues that:

\begin{quote}
Sexually, the lover-poet’s wandering toward the Najd and away from al-Yemen also represents the romance lover’s tendency to defer or postpone the consummation of his desire. The link between the female erotic and topography implicit in the etymology of the word ‘al-Najd’ is indicative of how even the poet’s geographical wandering is occurs on a sexual terrain. Al-Najd also means the ‘breasts of a woman’ and if we extend this metaphor, then al-Yemen, as al-ghur meaning ‘the belly, lowland, or hole’, is the hidden female erogenous zone\textsuperscript{125}.
\end{quote}

Therefore, the body of a woman is a ground of adventure like the earth itself. The poet compensates the absence of her body by aiming for her place. The land—of which her places are a part—acts symbolically as the beloved’s body to imply her presence.

5.4 Presence through Absence: The Beloved’s Presence in Nature

In addition to a presence found through the location of the beloved, she is also present in the natural world. Although absent in body, signs of her can be discovered by the poet in every aspect of nature surrounding him. Jacobi argues that

\textsuperscript{122} Ibid., p. 184.
\textsuperscript{123} Jamil, p. 31.
\textsuperscript{124} Khan observes that ‘Majnūn frequently seems to be either perched on a hill or roaming in a valley’. For more details see her study, p. 184.
\textsuperscript{125} Ibid., p. 185.
it is characteristic of a later age (after the pre-Islamic era) that the romantic attitude
towards nature allows every object to be imbued with the poet's emotion\textsuperscript{126}.
Majnūn’s romance is a typical case in this regard. Andre Miquel demonstrates that
no independent sheer image of nature occurs in Majnūn’s poetry. However, certain
elements of nature are described in referring to Majnūn, to Laylā and to their love.
These depictions of nature are obtained through the personal adventures of the lover
that made him associate his love with nature\textsuperscript{127}. Names of places from nature like
\textit{Tūbaḍ}’s mountain, \textit{Nu’mān} and \textit{Najd} have become symbolic references to past
memories of happy days:

\begin{center}
\begin{verse}
When \textit{Tūbaḍ} saw me weeping he welcomed me
I said: where are those who used to camp here
and enjoy happiness and security?\textsuperscript{128}
\end{verse}
\end{center}

Laylā’s image in Majnūn’s poetry is conjured up through various elements from the
worlds of animals, plants and inanimate forms. Noteworthy here is the comparison
he often makes between Laylā and the gazelle\textsuperscript{129}. However, Laylā is also referred to
through other natural elements such as unstable sand dunes, so as to symbolise the
passing time that destroys everything\textsuperscript{130}:

\begin{center}
\begin{verse}
Though unreachable, the single dune of sands,
located in \textit{al-Hima}, is still beloved to me\textsuperscript{131}
\end{verse}
\end{center}

The \textit{saba} zephyr is always described as a carrier of the beloved’s memory. Its
journey through the night, according to Majnūn, adds passion to passion\textsuperscript{132}. Another
favoured image is of the shackled bird:

\begin{footnotes}
\textsuperscript{126} Jacobi, “Time and Reality in “Nasib” and “Ghazal”, p. 7.
\textsuperscript{128} Majnūn, p. 212, trans. Kinany, p. 238.
\textsuperscript{129} See, for example, his \textit{diwan}, pp. 212, 215, 221.
\textsuperscript{130} Miquel, p. 73.
\textsuperscript{131} Majnūn, p. 26.
\end{footnotes}
The night they said: ‘Come morning or come evening,
Layla al-‘Amiriyah will have left,’
My heart was like a sand-grouse
Gulled into a snare
She tugged at it all night,
The wing already trapped

He continues, portraying himself in an image of trapped bird:

O When will my tortured heart be cured (of your love)
The arrows of death are between me and seeing you
Despite the exile, the pain, the longing, the shivering
You don’t come closer but I don’t go further
I am like a bird within the swinging palms of a child
The bird suffers death and the child enjoys the game
The child is too young to feel for the bird
And the bird has no feathers to fly away

Among the other images of the birds in Majnun’s poetry is the image of a sad singing
dove, whose sadness is rendered as a comparison with the poet’s sorrow, and he
also compares his poetry and her songs. In his poetry, lovers are transformed into
gazelles and Layla is transformed into the sun or a star. In an attempt to regain his
dream of lost love, Majnun refers to nature and to the animate world in his poetry:

If only we were two gazelles, grazing
On meadows of Hwazan, in desolate land
Oh, were we two doves amidst a wide waste,
We’d fly and fly, and at evening time seek the sheltered nest
Oh, were we two fishes swimming in the sea,
Darting even farther into waters deep
Oh, were we one now,

132 Ibid., p. 79. ‘Of the Arabian East Wind, poetically associated so closely with Najd, the
encyclopaedist al- Nuwayri (d. 733/1332) reports the tradition that “never has God sent a prophet
without sending with him the East Wind—al-saba’. The prophet Muhammad, too, was supported by
the East Wind’. Stetkevych, p. 125. So, this tradition may have something to do with the religious
lexical language of Majnun about al-saba and its association with Layla, keeping in mind the sacred
nature of Layla in his poetry.
133 Majnun, pp. 61, trans. Stetkevych, p. 162.
134 Ibid., p. 23.
135 Ibid., pp. 218-219.
136 Within Medieval Western literature, the dove is characterised as being true, faithful, honourable
and trustworthy. Some authors connect doves with the written word and they allude to the
organisational aspect of the dove’s secretarial skills and to its devotion to its mate. From antiquity
onwards the widowed turtle-dove was traditionally connected with mourning and weeping. The dove
was also the bird of the goddess Venus whose chariot was drawn by a flock of doves. For detailed
discussion of these ideas see: Regina Scheibe, “The Major Professional Skills of the Dove in The
Buke of The Howlat”, in L.A.J.R. Houwen (ed), Animals and the Symbolic in Mediaeval Art and
Literature (Groningen: Egbert Forsten, 1997), pp. 107-137.
And would that when death comes  
One grave were our bed\(^{137}\)  

Hence, a variety of natural elements serve to unite the lovers, while their actual bodies cannot be united: ‘Jamil looked at the sky in the hope that Buthaynah was looking at it at the same time, so that both their looks might meet\(^{138}\). And when Qays lost the hope of his beloved’s presence he consoled himself by saying:

However, the breeze still keeps us in touch with each other  
We behold the sunset, every evening, at the same time;  
And our souls still meet in dreams\(^{139}\)  

In a later stage of his life, when Layla is lost to him forever, Majnun suffers from insanity and consequently escapes to live in the desert in the company of gazelles. Majnun goes to the same places where he used to find happiness, but this time to find certainty from Layla’s presence. These places become his kingdom of the desert, insanity and poetry: this kingdom is like a secret garden that is removed from this world\(^{140}\). Another poetic image refers to the wild Majnun with whom the deer finds company and freedom. So this image of Majnun, who lives, eats and runs with the gazelles, suggests that he goes beyond comparing Layla with gazelles, to suggesting that the image of the gazelle reflects his own self and his beloved, Layla. His beloved is portrayed through the magic of poetry and he is depicted through the life he has chosen for himself\(^{141}\). The gazelle, according to the poetic canon, is consecrated for freedom. In one anecdote, among many, Majnun would sacrifice almost anything to set a gazelle free:

Majnun passed by two men that had hunted a gazelle. They had bound her with a rope and were taking her away. When Majnun saw her thrashing her feet in the rope, his eyes teared and he said to them:

\(^{137}\) Majnun, pp. 122-123, trans. Stetkevych, 144.  
^{138} Kinany, p. 284.  
^{139} Qays, p. 102, trans. Kinany, p. 284.  
^{140} For more details on this, see Miquel, pp. 52-54.  
^{141} Ibid., p. 66.
Replace her and take in her place a ewe from my sheep. (And Maymûn in his narrative related: Take in place of her a young she-camel from my camels). So he gave the [ewe] to the two men and they freed [the gazelle]. She made her escape running away (...). Majnûn said gazing at her while she was running with great speed, fleeing fearfully:

O likeness of Laylà, do not fear me
for I today am a friend the female wild beast
O likeness of Laylà, were you to tarry awhile, perhaps my heart would recover from its ravages
She flees, having been liberated from her bond by me.

You—if only you knew—have been freed for Laylà

Therefore, as Dols notes, ‘the portrayal of Qays [Majnûn] among the animals- unique in Arabic poetry- is quite lovely ... supernaturally, Qays is able to see the signs of love in nature and speak with the animals’.

In any case, an initial superficial view of Laylà’s depiction indicates that her presence is scattered and fragmented among the natural elements of stones, wind and water. However, a more profound observation of her portrayal suggests that her existence includes all the natural elements of the universe which are written about her. As Khairallah notes, Majnûn is depicted in the image of a person totally integrated into the natural animal world. His unity with nature is expressed positively through numerous points which portray him as completely at home in his desert environment. He is at peace on both a sub-rational and super-rational nature level.

Khairallah also states that Majnûn ‘communes with super-human forces, a communion symbolised by his being possessed by Laylà, but this communion is achieved through his sensitivity to the subhuman elements in nature’. As one can observe in his Diwân, Majnûn’s poetry succeeds in conveying the impression of fundamental intimacy between Majnûn and the world of symbols that surround him and always revive in him the memory of the beloved. Mountains, plains, and valleys,

---

143 Dols, p. 337.
144 Khairallah, p. 87.
145 Ibid.
Throughout this stage, Laylā unites with nature due to her frequent presence within the elements of nature, which in turn become reminders of Laylā:

The rising of the guiding star and the sun, agitate her memory.\[63\]

Therefore, ‘Majnūn’s references to nature were not merely conventional.\[148\] His frequent association of Laylā with natural elements such as wind, gazelles and so on ‘suggest the omnipresence of Laylā in nature and in the mind of Majnūn’.\[149\] He says:

I am distracted from understanding any talk,  
Except what is about you, for that is my concern  
I keep staring at those who talk to me so they may believe  
That I understand, but my mind is with you.\[64\]

And every attempt to escape her overwhelming presence is in vain:

I try to forget her remembrance, and yet  
It is as though Laylā is typified for me everywhere.\[151\]

Reading Stanbury’s analysis of Troilus and Criseyde’s romance, I would likewise argue that in Majnūn’s romance, Majnūn’s mind, mirroring Laylā’s image, becomes a reflecting surface, ‘a passive screen on which her image is recorded’.\[152\] The image printed on Majnūn’s mirroring mind is his picture of Laylā, garnered by his own imagination. In this light we can understand the anecdote told about Majnūn, when he is roaming in the desert and suddenly sees Laylā, but says to her: ‘Go away, your love preoccupied me and distanced me from you!’\[153\] The famous sufi Ibn ‘Arabi reported this anecdote and commented enthusiastically on it. In fact, it is no wonder

---

\[146\] Ibid.  
\[147\] Majnūn, p. 227.  
\[148\] Khairallah, p. 77.  
\[149\] Ibid., p. 78.  
\[150\] Ibid., p. 179, trans. Khairallah, p. 78.  
\[151\] Cited and translated by Khairallah, p. 77.  
\[152\] Stanbury, p. 233.  
that Majnūn’s legend became very popular among sufis later on. The figure of Majnūn was attractive to mystics because Majnūn’s rapture was analogous to their ecstatic states. Al-Shibli gives Majnūn as a sufi example:

Whenever Majnūn of the Banu ‘Āmir was asked about Laylā, he would say, ‘I am Laylā’. Thus, by means of Laylā, he would absent himself from Laylā, until he remains present to his vision of Laylā, and absent to every sense except Laylā, and (thereby) sees everything present through Laylā.

Ibn ‘Arabī conceived of Majnūn as an ideal lover and considered his madness a symbol of beatific vision, but he was not the only one; al-Ghazālī interpreted his passionate love symbolically, and al-Junayd considered him as one of God’s saints.

5.5 Conclusion

The duality of the present and absent bodies of the beloved in al-ghazal al-‘udhri has been the primary concern of this chapter. The ‘udhri poet depicts the physical body of his beloved by portraying her as the image of ideal beauty. Nevertheless, he also portrays her body symbolically or through symbolic channels. Symbolising the body of the beloved can be observed in many ‘udhri poetic themes such as the longing for the place of the beloved and the depiction of her in the form of a phantom. These themes reveal an attempt to regain the absent body of the beloved and to overcome this absence. On the other hand, the bodily presence of the beloved takes the forms of gestures and speech. Gestures act in the ‘udhri tradition as a means of

---

154 For a discussion of ‘udhri love in link with sufi love, see: Aduniṣ, al-thabit wa al-mutahawwil, vol. 1, pp. 284-287.
155 Dols, p. 322.
157 See Kahirallah, pp. 101-102.
communication between the lovers and speech is a potent factor in igniting love and in continuing to inflame passion. This presence-through-absence is also discussed in this chapter by examining the presence of the beloved in nature. An initial superficial view of the beloved’s depiction indicates that her presence is scattered and fragmented among the natural elements of stones, wind and water. However, a more profound observation of such descriptions suggests that her existence actually absorbs the natural elements of the whole universe within which she is mentioned. Her remarkable omnipresence is illustrated in al-ghazal al-'udhri. Hence, is it important for her physical body to be absent in this stage, so as to enable her to be omnipresent? In other words, does the absence of the beloved enhance poetry written about her? This is the question we shall examine in the next chapter.
Textuality versus Reality

6.1 Introduction

The Umayyad poet Dhū al-Rummah was once asked: ‘What would you do if your genius did not help you to compose poems (inqafal du'nak al-shi'r)?’ Dhū al-Rummah answered that it could never happen since he knew an ever-effective way of arousing his genius. ‘It is’ he said, ‘just to remember your beloved while you are alone’.

Dhū al-Rummah is known as a lover-poet who lived in the Umayyad age. This anecdote about him shows the complicated relationship between love and poetry, neither of which is shown to be simply a result of the other. The remembrance of the beloved inspires the poet to compose poetry, but that presupposes the beloved’s absence in the first place. It is her memory, rather than her actual figure, the loss of her rather than the union with her, that inspires poetry. The poet here is aware that his intense emotion leads him to a place in the realm of the poets.

The earlier chapters have discussed both the physical and symbolic depictions of the beloved’s body in al-ghazal al-‘udhri. The duality of the presence and absence of the body was of primary focus in the previous chapter, which leads us to question the link between the absent body and poetry. Hence, in the following chapter I will first look at the concept of ‘one ideal beloved’ in the ‘udhri’ tradition. The characteristic of having only one beloved is a core element of the ‘udhri’ tradition. Secondly, I will examine how al-ghazal al-‘udhri addresses the idealization of womanhood; specifically, the connection between this idealization and the concept

---

of the inaccessible woman and the trope of inaccessibility. The trope of unfulfilled love – all-consuming only by nature of its being unfulfilled -- and its being a goal in and of itself will be explored in detail. Next, I will discuss the paradox of the ‘udhrī poet’s complaint about love and his embracing of it. Then, I aim to offer an argument about the discourse of cultural value developed around poetry, the reception of the poet as a hero and the representation of poetry as the ultimate goal.

6.2 One Ideal Beloved

As noted in a previous chapter, the ‘udhrī poets transpose every aspect of the beloved’s body into perfect and beautiful detail, and personify her as the imaginary model of the ideal woman. This model is firmly engraved in both the collective consciousness and the literary tradition. In this chapter, it will be argued that raising the beloved to the level of the ideal implies that she is the subject of imagination. Idealizing the beloved in this way makes her into a fantasy. The question to be asked here is: does the idealization of the beloved in the ‘udhrī poem imply that she is inaccessible? Or in other words: does the poet wish to present above all an image of his supposed virtue as inspired by the presence of such a unique beloved?

Sufyān b. Ziyād narrated: ‘I asked a woman from the ‘Udhrah tribe, who was suffering so intensely from fatal love that I feared it would kill her: “Out of all of the Arabian tribes, why is love killing the people of ’Udhrah?” She replied: “We are beautiful and chaste. Beauty leads us to chastity. Chastity yields softness in our hearts. Such love causes death. Yet, we see eyes you cannot see”’.² It is to be observed, from the woman’s reply, that she first links beauty to chastity, and then

explains the connection by saying, ‘Beauty leads us to chastity’. She declares that this is what leads her people ultimately to death. ‘We see eyes that you cannot see’. Thus, this woman provides an explanation of love unto death that emerged from her tribe, ‘Udhrah, by connecting the extraordinary beauty, especially of the eyes, with chastity that is achieved by this presence of perfection. Therefore, chastity, in her statement, is a result of a deep respect for ideal beauty.

When the beloved becomes an abstract idea, she unavoidably becomes unattainable. That means, in all respects, the poet evaluates her as being above or beyond all other women, whether a wife or, even, a mother. The beloved in ‘udhrī poetry is the only one\(^3\). It is only Layla for Majnūn, just Buthaynah for Jamīl and only Lubnā for Qays … and so on\(^4\).

A part of idealizing the beloved is to keep her as the only one. To avoid the idea of bearing children, this oneness must stay intact. Any reference to any aspect relating to the image of an attained woman will necessarily imply her ability to have children and thus will damage the image of her remote solitude. This suggests a parallel with monotheism. The beloved in the ‘udhrī tradition is the only one, and she must remain so. Thus, she must be and remain removed from the act of reproduction.

As we have seen in a previous chapter, there is an insistent rejection of the notion of marriage between ‘udhrī lovers. Thus, if any of them were previously

---

\(^3\) Jayyusi sees that the metamorphosis of the beloved as an ideal of womanhood was a rebellion against polygamous marriage, and against the rejection of celibacy professed by Islam. Jayyusi, p. 423.

\(^4\) While ‘Umar b. Abī Rabi‘ah, for instance, says: “Peace (salaḥ) be upon her - if she should accept it, And if she should dismiss it, then peace (salam) be upon another woman!”’. ‘Umar b. Abī Rabi‘ah, Diwan, ed. ‘Abd al-Raḥmān al-Miṣṭawi (Beirut: Dar al-ma‘rifah, 2007), p. 162.
married, as were Qays and Lubnā, the love story must separate them again. The explanation that is given here is that Lubnā could not bear children. In this story, society insists that the consummated union between lovers must bear fruit observed, and life must continue into the new generation. In contrast, Qays believes in love itself, and nothing can change that love. He describes his love by saying:

Your love is ingrained in my heart
just as fingers are attached to the hands.

Before obeying his father, Qays suggested to him that he (his father) should marry again and have more children. Just as his father demands that his son take another wife, the son ironically requests that his father take another wife and refuses to divorce Lubnā. However, his poetry portrays his deep regret about obeying his father and divorcing Lubnā:

Do you weep on Lubnā,
while you left her of your own accord?
I see now that you were like a man,
who goes to death of his own accord
O, my heart, admit that you love her,
And then try to forget her; no, O love,
Do whatever you will
O my heart, tell me what you will do,
when Lubnā goes very far away
You seem as you have not been inured
to separation and misfortunes.

The romance fans the flames of his love and, therefore, his poetic inspiration by isolating him from his beloved. Nevertheless, on the narrative level, this refusal to continue their physical union implies that the lovers should never have children. The only possible offspring for the ‘udhri lover is poetry. It is a linguistic creation, not

5 Qays Ibn Dhariḥ was forced by his parents to divorce his dear but sterile wife, and was not able to do without her afterwards. See their story in al-Shi‘r wa al-Shu‘ara‘, p. 628, and al-Aghani, vol. 9, pp. 124-150.
6 Qays, p. 65.
7 Al-Isfahani, vol. 9, p. 126.
biological. Therefore, poetry is the only outcome of ‘udhrī love, as the lovers’ involvement with each other results in poetry and not in offspring.

This is a crucial aspect of the ‘udhrī tradition as it contrasts with the Bedouin norms that ‘udhrī poets largely belong to. Reading Abu-Lughod’s analysis of Bedouin society⁹, I would argue that ‘udhrī poets present a different position regarding a women's childlessness than does their society. Abu-Lughod observes that [in Bedouin society] women are associated with nature; ‘as reproducers, women are responsible for giving birth to the children that are so desired and adored (...) fertile women are valued, admired, and envied. Barren women face a sad life’¹⁰. In contrast, in the ‘udhrī tradition, the beloved woman is idealized and as such does not fulfill the role of women as ‘reproducers’ because she is unique and cannot have her image emulated by her offspring.

6.3 Desire towards Possession

The structure of the ‘udhrī romance reflects the dominant theme of longing, the strong desire to possess the dream/ beloved, and the linguistic form within which this desire is shaped. There is not one single verse ascribed to Qays while he was with Lubnā as her husband. His entire diwan exposes his torment and love for Lubnā just after he lost her. Apparently, she had to become unattainable for the poetry addressed to her to flower. I shall argue that the idealization, the distance and the solitude of the beloved enable her to play her decisive role: inspiration. The whole

⁹ Although Abu-Lughod’s study is concerned with a contemporary community of Bedouin in the Western Desert of Egypt, I argue that it may be partially useful to offer a wide-ranging framework to understand Bedouin society in general.

‘udhri experience unconsciously distances the beloved in order to detonate the force of the poetry.

In Majnūn’s romance it is noticeable that it is his distance from Laylá rather than his proximity to her that agitates his heart with love. In one account, al-Isfahānī states that when news of Laylá reached Majnūn, he fell in love with her after she was described to him. Thus, it was her absence, on the one hand, and the language that was used to ‘describe’ her, on the other hand, which engendered his desire for Laylá. Bloch demonstrates that: ‘the object must be absent for desire to be fixed on it’.

It seems that Majnūn recognizes the conflict between the ‘attainment’ and ‘losing heart’ as he says:

Why, you madman, have you lost your heart
for one for whose attainment you have no hope

But soon after this censure to his heart he states that ‘the most desirable thing to a man is what he is forbidden’. So, there is a permanent state of longing; ‘the expression of male desire absents the female object of desire because this desire is anchored to the absence of the female in the first place’, as will be discussed in the following section.

This poetic flux among ‘udhri lovers, and the frequent complaint about the deprivation and distance, could be a form of expressing their desire for the beloved, and a reprise of it in a highly remarkable manner. One of Freud’s students, Marie Bonaparte, has stated that, ‘[works of art or literature] govern the manner in which our strongest, though most carefully concealed desires are elaborated, desires which

---

15 Khan, p. 150.
often are the most repugnant to consciousness, also govern the elaborations of a work of art. In many 'udhri stories, the relationship between the lover and his beloved has grown since their childhood. Then, the longing for their sweet past shaped his experience as a lover and a poet. 'udhri poetry embodies the wish to become reunited with the childhood sweetheart. For instance, it is stated in *al-Aghani* that:

Majnūn was in love with Laylā...whose nickname was Umm Malik, when they were children. Each fell in love with the other while they were out tending the flocks of their families. They continued thus until they grew up and then she was veiled from him. And the following saying of his indicates this:

I fell in love with Layla when she
Was just a girl with forelock
When the swelling of her breasts had not yet
Been manifest to playmates
Two children tending the lambs
Would that we never grown up, nor had
The lambs grown old!

Freud states that 'the relation established between memory and reproduction is different for every case'. *Al-Aghani* also provides a similar story regarding Kuthayyir’s love for ‘Azzah, in which the poet saw his girl first when she was still a child. The implicit desire for what he once knew, and then lost, is evident. Even the bizarre daydreams the poet espoused depicts the excess of his emotion, and show how the repressed desires return in a repulsive poetic form. We might recall Freud’s

---

16 Elizabeth Wright, *Psychoanalytic Criticism: Theory in Practice* (London and New York: Methuen, 1984), p. 40. Referring to Freud here does not mean that we necessarily applied his framework. Also, we are not going to treat the works as symptomatic. Nonetheless, the mere idea of the aesthetic of id-psychology which grounded in the notion that the work of art is the secret embodiment of its creator’s unconscious desire is worth considering here. Richard Wollheim even argues that Freud was fully aware of the difference between treating art as biographical evidence and treating it as aesthetic object. Cited in: Wright, p. 29.
statement: ‘the poet composes his verses as the dreamer creates his day dreams’.

Kuthayyir says:

O, ‘Azzah, I wish we were a couple of scabby camels-
grazing away in an empty place
He who would see us would say:
These are two scabby animals, whose disease is contagious,
Even though the female is beautiful
If we should approach a watering place,
Its people would shout out to us and beat us
I wish that our owner were a man of great wealth,
So he would neither care for us
nor miss us when we ran far away

Kuthayyir was heavily criticised for these verses. One of the critics told him: ‘You had wished for her and yourself the agony of being enslaved, humiliated and disfigured. What else have you left? What you had wished for her is rightly expressed by the saying: having animosity with a sane person is much better than befriending a fool’. However, this kind of criticism neglects the excessive desire to be with the beloved under any condition or circumstances, even if repulsive.

Khairallah observes that ‘the desire to reconnect with the past can be satisfied only through symbolic channels. Hence, the archetypal character who achieves this kind of reconnection finds universal appeal, and is usually represented by a great variety of forms’.

---

23 Khairallah, p. 22.
6.4 Poetry and the Absence of the Desire’s Object

It is noteworthy that so many ‘udhri lovers were poets\textsuperscript{24}. This is essentially what earned these lovers a place in most Arabic collections of poetry. Yet, I would argue that their deep consciousness of the fact that they are poets itself shapes their romances. If the beloved is the feminine ideal, or is depicted as such, she is unattainable and so her lover will suffer from his ardent love forever. Therefore, the lover will continually compose poetry to express the torture and repression caused by such love. Whether poetry is a sort of remedy, as several ‘udhri verses have suggested\textsuperscript{25}, or is an object in itself, its presence in this tradition is essential.

When the beloved becomes a part of the dream world, this necessarily implies her potential as a source of inspiration, as the poet-lover admits in the following anecdote: A woman denigrates the poet Kuthayyir by saying to him: ‘God has demeaned you, since he made you known only by the name of a woman’, meaning ‘Azzah. Kuthayyir says: ‘God has not demeaned me. By her, my reputation was enhanced, my life matters were enlightened, and my poetry became powerful’\textsuperscript{26}. This anecdote shows that some people perceive Kuthayyir as bearing a low status, by associating his fame with a woman’s name. Nevertheless, the poet himself views this association in a different light: ‘my reputation was enhanced, my life matters were enlightened, and my poetry became powerful’. As Khan notes, ‘Kuthayyir is shown mentioning the benefits accruing to him in the field of poetry perhaps suggests that

\textsuperscript{24} As I have mentioned in the introduction, my study concentrates on five ‘udhri lovers: Majnu, Qays, ‘Urwah, Kuthayyir and Jamil. They are all poets, whose collections of poems (diwans) have been edited and published. Nevertheless, in some sources dealing with the theme of love one can find several narratives about other ‘udhri lovers, where few verses are ascribed to them. I am not sure if they are considered as poets or not as we do not have evidence that they composed entire poems.

\textsuperscript{25} Majnun says: If you deny me Layla and the beauty of her conversation, you will not deny me rhymes and tears. Majnun, p. 228, trans. Khairallah, p. 66.

\textsuperscript{26} Ibn Qutaybah, p. 415, trans. Khairallah, p. 66.
‘udhrī poet-lovers risked being “enslaved” to a female beloved primarily in order to experience an “ennobling transformation” in their literary careers\(^27\). In another story given in *al-Aghānī*, some of the literary critics suggested that: ‘living on the spirit of anticipation was more agreeable than the meeting of the beloved’. Commenting on two lines of poetry composed by the Umayyad poet al-Ḥwas— in which he said that he knew two kinds of nights, a happy one spent with the beloved, and a restless one full of sorrow and cares, Ibn Jundab, a contemporary of al-Ḥwas, said: ‘I prefer the restless night to the other’. Al-Ḥaramī, the reporter of the story added: ‘That was because the sorrowful night gave him the opportunity of yearning, hoping and composing ghazal\(^28\).

The assumption that this story asserts, that of avoiding marriage or any sort of physical union between ‘udhrī lovers, suggests several points, which will be discussed in the following section. In fact, the narrators of stories were preoccupied with the idea of sensuality, and its connection with love; therefore, they heightened it by dwelling so frequently on its absence. Also, the absence of consummation between the ‘udhrī lover and his beloved continuously inflames his passion. This passionate love inspires beautiful poetry within the ‘udhrī poet-lover. In addition, the poet or the narrators are aware that the unattainability of the beloved is in fact essential for composing poetry. Khan demonstrates:

> The more absent, occulted and elusive the female ideal, the more prominent and intense is the lover’s desire for this ideal. If male’s expression results in the loss of the love object, this loss or absence of the beloved merely intensifies and perpetuates male desire and its revelation. When the object is concealed, when Layla’s words or body are veiled, the revelation of Majnun’s desire increases. The

\(^27\) Khan, p. 294.
\(^28\) Cited and translated by Kinany, pp. 276-277.
unavailability and inaccessibility of the love object merely increases its desirability in the eyes of the lover.\footnote{30}{Khan, p. 159.}

Here we observe textuality verses reality; by creating obstacles between the lovers, the trope fans the flame of their love. Hence, the questions that al-‘Aqqād posed: ‘Why did Jamīl compose love poems for Buthaynah while he was aware that by doing so he would be prevented from marrying her? Was it because he was too aesthetic? Or was he too weak willed? Or was al-ghazal above everything else, and an end in itself?’\footnote{30}{Al-‘Aqqād, pp. 44-45.} These questions are worth considering. At the heart of these questions, I would argue, lie the seeds of their answers. However, al-‘Aqqād’s conclusion is less impressive than the questions he poses, as he claims: ‘Whatever the reasons that caused Jamīl to take this path, it is not a straight path, and, thus, Jamīl deserves the dilemma in which he finds himself’. Clearly, Jamīl’s dilemma is not about possession. It is, I would rather suggest, about loss. Then, again, loss inflames love, and love inspires poetry.\footnote{31}{It is worth noticing that some modern poets emphasise the absence of the beloved: ‘Yeats even suggests that a male poet cannot possibly achieve both forms of “love”: possession of the woman and of the poem are mutually exclusive, if the poet must lose the beloved to gain the desire that sustains his poetry-- an economic trade-- off that Yeats foregrounds in his work. He often implies that the beloved must be absent, incapable of reciprocation or receiving his desire, so that he may work up the poetry’s desire in language…Although the poems often protest the loss of the beloved, they also betray an awareness that this loss creates the “space” of desire that engenders them’. www.questia.com\PM.qsta. 21 September 2006.}

A similar suggestion should apply to Majnūn: ‘It is the obsession itself which creates the distance here, Majnūn’s behavior—as a poet, one might add—that will drive them (Majnūn and Laylā) apart.\footnote{32}{Maria Rosa Menocal, Shards of Love Exile and the Origins of the Lyric (Durham and London: Duke University Press, 1994), p. 146.}

This parallel does not escape the notice of some scholars: al-‘Azm maintains that ‘udhūrī love is in fact a sensual love, of which physical attraction is an integral
part. However, no physical contact actually takes place because the lover chooses to keep his love alive by creating more obstacles between himself and the object of his desire. There are many narratives that illustrate this point: Jamīl composes love poems for Buthaynah in spite of the fact that the Bedouin convention would prevent a lover, who has dishonoured his beloved by flirting with her in public, from marrying her. Moreover, she was proud of his poetry and swore to meet him whenever he came to see her, as al-Īsfahānī states: ‘Then Buthaynah learned that he had paid court to her so she swore by God that whenever he came to her alone she would go out to him and not hide herself from him.’ Both of them, thus, were creating obstacles between their matrimonial union. As the sources suggest, Jamīl was a noble, brave, rich, handsome gentleman from a powerful tribe which protected him, even after the ruler had outlawed him. On the other hand, Buthaynah’s husband was an ugly, one-eyed man and, of course, not a poet. Thus, the opportunity for Jamīl to take Buthaynah or elope with her was always there, but he did not take it.

In al-‘Azm’s opinion, the ‘udhri lover enjoys the suppression of love. He avoids marriage or any possible union in order to keep his love at boiling point. To support his argument further, al-‘Azm refers to the concept of love and the Don Juan character within Western literature. There is a conflict between Don Juan and ‘udhri lovers on the one hand, and the established conventions of the society on the other hand.

---

33 This idea is established according to some narratives and verses, but we should keep in mind that such narratives and verses have always appeared with their contrary as we have observed earlier.
34 Al-‘Azm, p. 81.
35 However, this convention is questionable as several statements suggest that poetry composed for a Bedouin woman should never prevent the poet, or any other man from marrying her.
37 Ibid., pp. 288-290
38 Ibid., p. 311
39 Al-‘Azm, pp. 52-60.
other. They believe that married love is static and would utterly destroy the acute emotion they enjoy. However, the difference between them is that the ‘udhri lover keeps his destructive love not by jumping from one woman to another, as Don Juan does. Instead, he concentrates all his emotions on one unique beloved. He hopes to possess her, but, at the same time, he creates all kinds of possible obstacles to prevent himself from having her. Afterwards, passion leads the ‘udhri lover to madness and to roaming the desert, as the fire of love melts his body and mind. Hence, he achieves what Don Juan achieves not by moving from one woman to another, but by placing himself in a condition of repressed and unfulfilled desire. Naturally, al-‘Azm continues, this condition leads the ‘udhri lover to experience suffering and torture. Nevertheless, he jealously guards his pain, because it is an essential part of the core of his experience.\(^{40}\)

The theme of love, which lasts forever, is a central theme in the ‘udhri tradition. ‘udhri love is endless love, and nothing can detract from it, not even the mean reactions of the beloved; Jamil says:

> And it is not because she surrendered to me that I loved her; but she captured me by flirtation and withholding.\(^{41}\) [5]

Thus, I am inclined to agree with Khan in her observation that

[i]n fact, all the ‘udhri romances are about this endless deferral of desire’s fulfillment. True love or desire in these romances is defined as that which ought not to be consumed…Union is ultimately not sought because it means the end of desire and pleasure…Ostensibly, the ‘udhri poet-lovers frame themselves as seeking fulfillment and marriage with the beloved, but then they thwart their chances to achieve these goals and portray themselves the victims of fate, social mores or the beloved’s caprice.\(^{42}\)

\(^{40}\) Ibid., p. 89.
\(^{41}\) Jamil, p. 74. Another ‘udhri poet, Kuthayyir ‘Azzah, says: ‘Do me good or do me harm, I shall not blame you, not hate you, even when you make yourself hateful’. kuthayyir, p. 57. trans. Kinany, p. 291.
\(^{42}\) Khan, p. 198.
Moreover, I would argue that this passion grows separately from the beloved and it is in fact an obsession in itself. The object of love is not the real Laylā or Buthaynah, who as a human could change or get older; it is rather, the desire itself. The ideal image of the beloved is meant to fan the flame of destructive emotion. One cannot help but examine this striking anecdote: One day, while Majnūn was roaming in desert, stricken by madness, companied by beasts, and surrounded by deer, Laylā, his beloved, appeared to him. Surprisingly enough, Majnūn said to her: ‘go away, your love has overcome me, and isolated me from you’⁴³. Accordingly, it is not ‘you’ -- not Laylā--but ‘your love’ which had obsessed him.

In another anecdote, Majnūn has said: ‘Were I able to divert desire from her [Laylā] to you, I would turn it away from her and from each one after her and would live among people, harmoniously and with ease’⁴⁴, in responding to some women’s offer for him to fulfill his desire with them instead of with Laylā. In commenting on his response to the women, Khan argues that

Majnūn’s reference to “each one after her” can be interpreted as an indication of how it is upon an unrequited love, a fantasy beloved, that his desire is founded. Though the beloved image in this fantasy may change, it remains just that--a fantasy or an absent love object. Indeed, the object must be absent--it must not yield a presence or hold a promise of fulfillment--for desire to fixate upon it. Majnun portrays himself as unable to divert his desire to the women in the group only because they offer hope of requital and satisfaction in the love affair. His true love is a love that privileges the deferral rather than the consummation of union. Ultimately, it is with the phantom or fantasy of his own desire that he is in love⁴⁵.

⁴³ Ibn ‘Arabi, al-Futuḥat al-makkiyyah, p. 1467. www.alwaraq.net, 3 March 2007. Khairallah notes that: ‘This sufi anecdote adds to Majnun’s attitude a dimension hardly explicit in the diwan. Yet already Majnun’s condition, supported by his inflamed imagination, was pointing in this direction (…). Even though the diwan does not formulate an anecdote like Ibn ‘Arabi’s one, such an anecdote is latent in the text’. Khairallah, p. 79.
⁴⁵ Khan, p. 197.
Indeed, the ‘fantasy of his own desire that he is in love’ is evident in the anecdote in which Majnūn said to Laylā: ‘Go away, your love preoccupies and distances me from you’. The statement made by Jeopardy in her study of ancient French romances can be useful to quote here: ‘to take woman as metaphor and to make of her a pretext for literary discourse, is to appropriate and displace the subjectivity of the absent real woman’. Thus, it is understandable that later on Ibn ‘Arabi (d. 1240), the great sufi figure, became interested in Majnūn’s statement and commented delightfully on it by saying:

This is one of the rare instances, where domineering love is manifested as pleasant. As her presence came between his envisionment of her as a fathomed being, and her actual physical being. To him, her image is much nicer than her actual presence. Having lost that sense of pleasure of seeing her, he said, ‘Just disappear’.

It is worth noting, however, how ‘udhri love in general and Majnūn’s love in particular were eventually prized by sufis as an expression of mystical love. As some sufis saw in human love the entrance to the Way, Majnūn’s legend reaches the symbolic level. Hence, Majnūn is presented as a sufi example:

Whenever Majnūn of the Banū ‘Āmir was asked about Laylā, he would say, ‘I am Laylā’. Thus, by means of Laylā, he would absent himself from Laylā, until he remains present to his vision of Laylā, and absent to every sense except Laylā, and (thereby) sees everything present through Laylā.

In any case, the transformation of Majnūn’s legend into an allegory of sufi love is found particularly in Persian poetry. Starting from Niẓāmī, the touch of mystical love is found in his adaptation of Majnūn’s love story. ‘Preserving the outline of the romance, he retained the prominent episodes and added a number of his own

47 Ibn ‘Arabi, p. 1467.
invention. Inevitably, Niżāmī modified considerably the form and content of the legend. Niżāmī’s poem was widely imitated wherever Persian culture spread and the later poets borrowed heavily from his work. The most important feature of this works was the mystical rendering of the Romance. However, in Khairallah’s view, Jāmī is considered the leading light in this adaptation in his ‘Laylā u Majnūn’.

6.5 Complaint and Embrace

It is remarkable to observe how often those lovers complain about their suffering in love. They usually portray it as a form of magic energy that captivates and enchants them. They ‘proclaim that love was their fate and, using fatalistic arguments declare that they could not help loving their damsels’. Jami, for example, says:

He (the blamer) said: “Sober up!
How long will you be mad about Buthaynah,
without being able to do anything about her?”
I said : “Concerning her,
God passed upon me the sentence that you see.
Can God’s decree be controverted?
Whether to love her means to be guided aright or to stray,
I stumbled upon this love without intent”

In theses verses Jami ascribes his love and its consequences, ‘without being able to do anything about her’, to fate. Therefore, it is understood that he is helpless in his love for Buthaynah, as what God has decreed cannot be altered. It does not matter then if love ‘means to be guided aright or to stray’; as the poet has to follow it

---

49 Dols, p. 322.
50 Ibid., p. 323.
51 For detailed discussion of Persian versions of Majnūn’s story and its connection with the Arabic version see Ghunaymi Hilal’s work: al-Hayah al-‘aṭtifiyah bayna al-‘udhrīyah wa al-ṣūfiyah; dirasat naqd wa muqaranah ḥawla mawdu’ Layla wa al-Majnūn fī al-‘adabayn al-‘arabī wa al-fārisī. Khairallah also offers a discussion on the sufi elements in Majnūn’s legend in Persian, especially for Jami’s poetry: pp. 107-125.
52 Kinany, p. 258.
anyhow. Nevertheless, expressing the desire to escape from it, he says in exasperation:

I wish I were rid of you, love,  
Will you leave me no rest?  

Moreover, Jamīl reaches the point of cursing Buthaynah:

My God cast motes into Buthayna’s eyes!  
May he blacken her brilliant teeth!  

This is the only time he uses a negatively-charged poetic verse towards his beloved. Apparently this verse casts doubt on the (true love) that Jamīl proclaims. Buthaynah herself is reported to have said to him: ‘Oh Jamīl, you claim that you love me, while you said: My God cast motes….?’ His reaction to her rebuke is crying and saying: ‘I am the one who said:

I wish I were blind and deaf while Buthaynah is guiding me,  
Not a word from her speech is hidden from me.  

However, this strange verse, a pray ḍuʿā‘ against Buthaynah’s beauty has raised a debate among the classical literary authors as well as among contemporary scholars. Many Arab exegetes argue that this ḍuʿā‘ could bear a positive meaning. When a thing becomes so perfect, one might pray against it to provide a kind of protection for it. Some say that the actual meaning of the verse is: what stunning eyes and mouth she has! It is the same as saying: ‘May God damn him, what a brave man he is!’ Some even interpret Buthynah’s eyes as her protectors, as in Arabic the word ‘ayn could be used to signify the visual organ, as well as referring to a spy. They also argue that her teeth represent her relatives who deny him the right to visit Buthaynah, as, again, the word anyāb could bear two meanings: teeth, and people in high

57 Ibid., p. 398.
positions. Another interpretation suggests that Jamīl is praying for her to have a long life, so the motes and black are hints of getting old, and living a long life\textsuperscript{58}.

However, taking into account all the arguments, my position is that the basis of Jamīl’s \textit{du’ā} is not hatred, but rather the violence of his love for Buthaynah. At some point, it became clear to him that her excessive beauty was the cause of his misery. That is why this verse lashes out at her beautiful eyes and delicious mouth--because they caused him so much pain. The beauty of the beloved is defined as the origination of the poet’s suffering. This is what the classical exegetes have overlooked while trying to interpret this verse within the framework of praise for the beloved’s beauty. I would rather argue that bodily beauty is not just portrayed in vivid depictions; it is also regarded as the source of fatal love. Likewise, the motif of wishing to get rid of love is frequently apparent in Qays b. Dharih’s \textit{diwār}; for instance, he says:\textsuperscript{59}

\begin{quote}
I said to my heart when love tormented me
and became unbearable:
O heart that has been led by desires,
awake, may God curse you for a heart
\end{quote}

[10]

and Jamīl often uses the metaphor of bondage:

\begin{quote}
O Buthaynah,
your snares entrapped my heart the day of the hunt,
but you escaped my snares\textsuperscript{60}
\end{quote}

[11]

In fact, the theme of bondage and captivity runs through the ‘\textit{udhri}’ poems\textsuperscript{61}. This can be observed in the common use of such terms as prisons, traps, and chains. The

\textsuperscript{58} Ibid.

\textsuperscript{59} Qays, p. 28.

\textsuperscript{60} Jamīl, p. 88.

\textsuperscript{61} Juuyusi criticised the beloved in the ‘\textit{udhri}’ tradition as she never gives: ‘the woman is hardly more than a recipient of love. She promises, but never fulfils. She loves, but in this literature. She never gives’ (Juuyusi, p. 426). In fact, this quality is popularly considered as a positive feature of a beloved in Arabic tradition in general. In spite of this convention, I would argue that the beloveds in the ‘\textit{udhri}’ tradition offered a great love and even composed verses to their lovers. The sources confirm to us that the beloveds were not as aloof and careless as some might think. As Juuyusi has noted, it is true that
image of the bond of love as a chain is prevalent in ‘udhri poetry. Hamori notes, ‘the complaint that love is a prison parallel the execrations, in the old poetry, of time, in which the speaker is caught as in current that pulls steadily towards the falls’⁶².

On the contrary, one should hear the undertone beneath this complaint and so-called fatalism: the latent desire for this love to continue and last. While Majnūn is expressing his discontent with his fate by reciting:

> God who decreed that she would be for somebody else,  
> Afflicted me with my love for her  
> Why would he not afflict me with something else?   

It is fundamental, though, to notice that some narratives associate Majnūn with madness, according to this verse specifically. They claim that once he composed it, a voice in darkness shouted at him: ‘You who are discontent with Allah’s fate! You are the one who interferes with his decisions’. Consequently, his mind is gone since that night⁶⁴.

Majnūn seems far away from the true wish to afflict him with something else.

As we read in al-Aghani:

> When Majnūn’s parents tried to cure him by taking him on pilgrimage, they demanded Majnūn to ask God to cure him from his passion for Layla. Interestingly, Majnūn grabbed Ka’bah and implores God to intensify and magnify his passion. He said: ‘Oh God, increase my passionate love for Layla, and do not let me forget her forever’⁶⁵.

In his poetry, Majnūn clearly shows his devotion to his beloved asking God to help him in his seeking for her:

---

⁶² Hamori, On the Art of Medieval Arabic Literature, p. 45.  
At Mecca, by night, the pilgrims prayed to God
Beseeching forgiveness for their sins,
While I called O God, the first thing I ask for myself is Laylā,
Then be my reckoner.
If Laylā is given to me in my lifetime,
no worshipper’s repentance will be greater than mine.66

Moreover, the ‘udhrī lover’s persistence on his love goes so far as Majnūn says:

How excellent is the work of Satan,
if my love for her is the work of Satan67

Kuthayyir confesses:

They said that she departed
And that I had to choose between forgetting her
Or continuing to weep;
I said that the latter would better soothe my pain.68

Although he knows it is a dead end, Majnūn’s only solution to rid himself of this love is to have more of it:

For Laylā’s love I treat my self with Laylā,
For wine a drunkard treats himself with wine.69

Does the ‘udhrī lover accept his fatal love and complain about it at the same time?
Or, is he in fact confining his love so as to avoid the excessive consequences of it, challenging the norms of society by claiming that his love is his fate decreed by God? It is not a choice. Nevertheless, it is a desirable fate, so much so that he asks his love to give him more of it every night:

O love for Laylā, each night double my grief
O solace of love, we shall meet on the Last Day.70

In other contexts also, describing the torment is a fundamental element in depicting love, as Bataille puts it: ‘Only the beloved in this world can bring the continuity

---

67 Majnūn, p. 17, trans. Hamori, p. 47. However, Ibn Qutaybah in al-shi’r wa al-sh’ra‘ states that this verse is falsely attributed to Majnūn. Ibn Qutaybah, p. 566.
69 Majnūn, p. 120, trans. Khairallah, p. 76.
70 Majnūn, p. 94.
between two discontinuous creatures. Hence, love spells suffering in so far as it is a quest for the impossible ….We suffer from our isolation in our individual separateness.

Ibn Ḥazm confirms: ‘Love is a delightful malady, a most desirable sickness. Whoever is free of it likes not to be immune, and whoever is struck down by it yearns not to recover’. In Ibn Ḥazm’s statement, one observes the link he has made between love and sickness. Love is fate like ‘sickness’, but, it is a ‘desirable’ one. In fact, the theme of love treated like sickness is particularly prominent in the diwan of ‘Urwah and the diwan of Qays, a theme to be explored in the final chapter of this study, on the lover’s body.

Kinany correctly notes that ‘udhri lovers hid a remarkably free and powerful will behind their so-called fatalism. They did not want to get rid of their pain because pain is the only genuine criterion of true love’. Nevertheless, he draws a parallel between the ‘udhri lovers’ resignation and the resignation of the ascetic Muslim as both hope for a better life in the world to come. He says, ‘Most of the ‘udhri lovers renounced the joys of life for the sake of their hopeless passion’. He also claims that ‘udhri lovers were capable of resigning themselves to hard living in the hope of deserving a better one in the future, the hereafter. He compares ‘udhri lovers and pagan lovers, whose lives lack any idea of the afterlife, so they do not show any sign of resignation.

However, one of the limitations with Kinany’s explanation is that it does not explain the conflict between Islamic resignation and ‘udhri lovers’ insistence on their

---

72 Ibn Ḥazm, pp. 100-101.
73 Kinany, p. 259.
74 Ibid., p. 261.
burning passion, and it assumes that ‘udhrī lovers are automatically ascetic Muslims and perfectly chaste. I would rather suggest that as much as the lover complains about his destiny, he also embraces it. Evidently, Kinany’s interpretation overlooks many of the ‘udhrī verses which reveal the desire for love’s joy in this life. For instance, Jamīl declares:

I have given up all desire involving this world
   except the love of her
Thus, I make no requests of the world,
nor do I feel that I must have an ampler portion

Jamīl has no request of the world, except his love for Buthaynah. He not only embraces it, he wishes for it. In fact, his love is the only wish that he has since Jamīl has ‘given up all desire involving this world’, as he declares in the verse quoted above.

In this light, we could understand the decisive role played by the motif of the blamer al-‘adhil within ‘udhrī poetry. Jamīl’s father summarized the argument of the blamers in these words: ‘Women are replaceable’. For Jamīl, of course, they are not. He declares:

Blamers took me to task (lit. excoriated me)
   because of my love for her.
If only they suffered as I suffer!
   When they kept on reproaching me on account of you,
   I said to them:
   Do not exceed the proper bounds;
   Hold back some of this reproof and be moderate

Love, for the ‘udhrī poet, is fundamental in his life but the blamer does not understand this because, according to Jamīl, he does not suffer from love. Hamori notes that:

---

75 Jamīl, p. 33, trans. Hamori, On the Art of Medieval Arabic Literature, p. 43.
76 Al-Isfahani, p.192.
77 Jamil, p. 32. trans. Hamori , p. 39. See similar themes in diwān Jamīl, pp. 74, 98, 100.
The blamer has been a straw man of caution. His job was to try to prevent the protagonist from making the heroic gesture (…) the lines by Jamil are shot through with irony. The apostrophe to the blamers is in the old style. Unbridled speech is objectionable; the blamer should practice moderation … the blamers must be accusing Jamil of that very thing: lack of moderation.78

Interestingly, the figure of the blamer sometimes becomes a desirable figure in the romance, since he confirms the strength of love by blaming the lover. Whereby Ibn Ḥazm describes al-‘adhil as a ‘tough business, and a heavy burden to bear’79, he also indicates that:

I have seen a lover so violent in his emotions, and so overwhelmingly infatuated, that he loved to be reproached more than anything in the world, in order that he might show his reproacher [blamer] how stubbornly he could rebel against his scoldings. He took a positive delight in opposing him, in provoking him to resistance and doubled reproof, and then in triumphs over his opponent80.

Thus, the ‘udhri poet jealously guards his love, and while he ostensibly complains about it, in fact he recognizes how fundamental it is to his life experience, and, furthermore, to his poetry.

6.6 The Heroic Gesture

There is no doubt that a pre-Islamic poet like ‘Antarah, presents a defining symbol of the ambivalence in the “poet/hero” image. ‘Antarah was described as a hero, not only because he was a knight, but also by virtue of his being a poet. His poetry allowed him to immortalise both his status as a knight, and his great love for his cousin, ‘Ablah. It is not surprising that ‘Antarah became a legendary hero, immortalised through enduring folk tales that survive--both in written form and as oral traditions -- even to the present day. Thus, in the classical Arabic culture, the

78 Hamori, p. 40.
80 Ibid., pp. 96-97.
poet was ‘a cultural hero because his socio-political as well as spiritual status placed him in the leading position’\textsuperscript{81}. In the pre-Islamic period, a poet was, as Hamori notes, ‘the pride and ornament of his people, for he alone would perpetuate the fame of their noble deeds, dignify the memory of their dead, and trap their enemies in songs of mockery’\textsuperscript{82}.

Nevertheless, with the emergence of Islam, the “poet/hero” image began to fade, giving way in the popular imagination to the “devout hero”, who would sacrifice all to strengthen and glorify the new religion.

The relationship between Islam and poetry has become a popular theme for academic debate. While some believe that the emergence of Islam weakened poetry, others argue that, on the contrary, it opened entirely new and interesting vistas for the medium\textsuperscript{83}. The Umayyad period saw the emergence of a new group of poets: they too sought the status of folk heroes through their poetry, but through references more intimate than glorious: theirs was a return to love poetry (ghazal). Unlike their pre-Islamic forebears, however, the Umayyad poets benefited from the advent of singing as entertainment, and the plethora of composers and female singers to be found for inspiration. This phenomenon continued to grow and evolve through subsequent eras.

The heroic gesture of the ‘udḫrī lover is that of being a poet. ‘If one is inclined to believe that Majnūn’s legend grew around, and in a way for the sake of, his poetry, then one could claim that his poetic daemon was also at the source of his

\textsuperscript{81} Khairallah, p. 34.
\textsuperscript{82} Hamori, p. 4.
\textsuperscript{83} For more elaborated discussions on this issue, see Šamī Makki al-'Anī, \textit{al-Islam wa al-shi’r} (al-Kuwait: al-Majlis al-watāni li al-thaqafah wa al-funun wa al-adab, 1983).
love’. For Majnūn, he lost everything but his poetry. He lost Laylā, his health, his relatives, his status in the tribe and, eventually, his mind, but he never lost his ability to compose love verses. His story is ‘the story of how hopeless love can make great poetry, even if so much else is destroyed along the way’.

Is it really Laylā that he longed for? We shall bear in mind his words to Laylā: ‘go away, your love has overcome me, and isolated me from you’. Nevertheless, his love does not isolate him from poetry. While he was roaming the desert, people would go to him just to listen to him reciting his poems. Khairallah has noted:

Poetry as a crisis, a dilemma, is as much of a fatal possession as love or madness proved to be. Psychologically, the positive effects of language in general and of poetry in particular are manifold (...). Poetry could function as a charming power, or as a medium of psychological relief. Therefore, is it the search for poetry, the search for inspiration, that characterises the ‘udhri lover? Is it for poetry that he creates the deferral of union within the ‘udhri tradition? Khan conceives this essential link between language and the deferral of union:

This wandering of desire or deferral of union is precisely what constitutes the pleasure of the lover. For the male lover, fulfillment of desire is equated with the end of pleasure for one very important reason. Fulfillment of desire would mean the end of his ability to luxuriate in the eloquence of language in the courtship ritual - whether the language be his own or that of/about the beloved. Certainly, the lover’s literary prowess constitutes his desire so that desire attainment would result in an end to the pleasure of his discursive identity and performance. Hence, a deferral rather than an achievement of union is sought.

Thus, through language and poetry, poets achieve their poetic gesture. If the ability to recite old Arabic poetry was the quality that helped endear Majnūn to Laylā in the

---

84 Khairallah, p. 66.
85 Menocal, p. 148.
86 Ibn ‘Arabi, p. 1467.
87 Khairallah, p. 66.
88 Khan, p. 201.
first place, his own poetry about her played a significant role in their love story later on. People around them focussed their attention on his poetry and acted accordingly. It was the fame of his poetry about Layla that caused her parents to refuse his marriage proposal. But, it seems that it does not matter if Majnūn’s love poetry proves to be a curse of sorts because of his self-consciousness as a poet\textsuperscript{89}. Even the anecdotes that appear in the classical books about Majnūn ‘were invented for an explicative purpose, so it is normal that they focus on the poetic fragments, for which they are meant to provide a context’\textsuperscript{90}. As we have already noted from Kuthayyir’s reply to the woman who condemned him for composing poetry solely on a woman (his beloved ‘Azzah), it is clear that Kuthayyir was aware of the heroic gesture he had achieved through poetry.

6.7 Conclusion

In this chapter I have offered a discussion of the notion of ‘one ideal beloved’ as a core element of the ‘\textit{udhrī}’ tradition. The lover is attached only to his unique beloved to whom he devotes his love and poetry. Therefore, the concept of matrimonial union between the lovers is absent from these romances in order to maintain the beloved’s uniqueness and to avoid replicating her in a sort of offspring. On the one hand, the various images expressing desire in the poems indicate the beloved’s depiction as an object of desire in al-\textit{ghazal} al-‘\textit{udhrī}. On the other hand, the fulfilment of this desire means deferral in various levels. While framing themselves as seeking marriage, the ‘\textit{udhrī}’ poets thwart their chances to achieve their aim and then complain about their

\textsuperscript{89} There are many anecdotes that suggest this poetic consciousness. For example, Majnūn’s story with Qays b. Dharih in which Majnūn had a competition with him even though he was in his desert isolation at the time. He said to Qays: ‘I still am a better poet when I say…’. See Abu Bakr al-Walībī, \textit{diwan Majnūn Layla}, ed. Jalal al-Dīn al-Ḥalībī (Beirut: Dar al-najm, 1994).

\textsuperscript{90} Khairallah, p. 63.
fate. However, the poets’ complaint of their suffering in love is accompanied by a wish for their love to last forever. They frequently state that the blamers, in fact, intensify their love, rather than defeat it. Hence, passionate love, I would argue, is a means for the poet-lover to make a heroic gesture. Love poetry is inseparable from love, as ‘udhri’ lovers are poets themselves. In classical Arabic literature, works on passionate love are, in fact, works on ghazal. A poet is often considered as a lover; al-Washsha‘ says: ‘whom who loved among poets are numberless’\footnote{Al-Washsha‘, p. 83.}. In the ‘udhri’ romances, the lover loses everything, including his beloved, except his ability to compose poetry. Being a poet seems to be his ultimate goal and heroic achievement.
The Representation of the Lover’s Body

7.1 Introduction

In *Lisān al-‘Arab* the following definition is provided for the word ‘*ishq*: ‘‘*Ishq* is excessive love. The excessive lover is called ‘*Ašhiq* because his intense feelings make him melt like the ‘*ishqah* tree. ‘*Ishqah* is a green tree that becomes yellow when crushed. It is, therefore, claimed that the noun ‘*Ishq* is derived from ‘*ishqah*’.

In Arabic, it is noticeable that many nouns refer to love. Nonetheless, about half of them link love with sickness or mental diseases. ‘A high proportion of the words express the woes of love—the longing, the pain, the grief, melancholy, confusion, and illness—rather than its pleasures’. Thus, in a symposium that took place in the ninth century, in the palace of Yahyā al-Barmakī, love was defined as based on the like-mindedness of the partners and it was a major cause of suffering, capable of subjugating, intoxicating and humiliating the lover to the point of annihilation.

Undoubtedly, the representation of the beloved’s body is the main concern of the ‘*udhri* tradition. In previous chapters we have examined the symbolic and physical representations of the beloved’s body. This does not, however, indicate the absence of the lover-poet’s own body; the ‘*udhri* tradition rather puts great emphasis on it, considering it the greatest recipient of the effects of profound emotion. It is his body that is malnourished, sick, suffering from insomnia and prematurely aged. The ‘*udhri* lover sometimes even reaches the point of madness, but death alone seems to be the ultimate path resulting from excessive passion. Hence, the vocabulary of

---

3 Abouseif, p. 66.
sickness, healing, the doctor and magic—all of which affect the body—is frequently repeated in *al-ghazal al-ʿudhri*. Some verses even confirm that the lover has become blind, mute and paralysed, simply due to his passion. It is remarkable that the concept of eternal beauty of the beloved contrasts with the concept of the mortal lover in *al-ghazal al-ʿudhri*. As we have seen in a previous chapter, the beloved in ʿudhri poetry is depicted as the most perfect human from head to toe; Qays declares:

O most perfect of people from head to toe,
and most beautiful of people clothed or unclothed\(^4\) [1]

We have also discussed how the beloved’s beauty in *al-ghazal al-ʿudhri* is beyond nature and associated with many extraordinary effects. In many cases, it surpasses human beauty as there are more astonishing effects attributed to it\(^5\). However, whereas the body of the beloved is presented as an eternally perfect example of beauty, that of the lover continues to deteriorate, growing old, ill and thin, and is therefore in direct contrast to the image of the beloved’s body. Jamīl clearly illustrates this point:

Buthaynah said,
when she saw
locks of red hair (on my head)
Oh Jamīl, You become older and your youth's gone.
I said,
O please stop it, Buthaynah
Have you forgotten our times at Lewa and Ajfari?
When my locks were (black) just like a crow's wing,
Daubed with Musk and ambergris
Your youth will never fade
as you are a precious pearl
We are from the same time,
So how can I have grown old while you have not?\(^6\) [2]

---

*Qays, p.109.*

*See chapter two of this thesis: ‘The Representation of the Beloved Body’, Section 2.8:’The Ethereal Nature of Beauty’.*

*Jamīl, p. 44.*
In Jamīl’s verses, the beloved’s beauty goes beyond time itself. It is therefore timeless beauty, which is eternally youthful; she is removed from time altogether by the image of eternal youth. In contrast, Jamīl himself, the lover, is affected by passion, which means that he becomes old and loses his youth. The vicissitudes that are ascribed to him never touch her because she is the one who has perfect eternal beauty.

7.2 Love as Malady in Classical Arabic Literature

In the Qur’an, surat Yūsuf used love to explain the somatic consequences of human emotions; to end their gossip ‘Azīz’s wife invites the women of the city to her house for a feast. Joseph comes in and all the women ‘slash their hands’ because of their excessive admiration for him; they cannot distinguish between the fruit and their hands. Thus, the effect on them is expressed in a bodily way. ‘Indeed the emotion felt by the sight of Joseph was so great that the charming assembly was seized by a collective physiological pain’.

In the classical Arabic tradition, when dealing with the theme of love, whether from medical or literary perspectives, it has been frequently stated that (‘ishq) passionate love is a kind of sickness. This idea was not new at the time, as it seems that Arab authors were influenced by Greek philosophy in this matter. In the fourth and seventh centuries CE, chapters on love were included in the sections on mental illnesses by two Byzantine authors, where they merely reproduce traditional

---

7 Bouhdiba, p. 25.
8 Old medical visions linked lovemaking, lust and ecstasy with moderation (or temperance or reasonability) and the old medical diagnoses. For more on this see: Michel Foucault, *The History of Sexuality*, trans. Robert Hurley (London: Penguin Books, 1990).
lists of symptoms and therapeutical suggestions. Moreover, ‘the difficulty of a medical diagnosis and treatment of an enervated and depressed young man or woman who suffered from lovesickness can even be found in ancient Egyptian literature’. Arabic medical literature shows similar tendencies in the discussion of love as a malady. In the general medical world, ‘ishq is included among the traditional mental sicknesses. For example, al-Mājūsī (d. 372/982) groups love with melancholy and provides a list of medicaments. Apart from Ibn al-Jazzār (d. ca. 395/1004), who characterises lovesickness as a kind of critical intensification of the natural desire of the soul for all beautiful things, love stays within the traditional frame of references. In his medical book al-ʿQānūn, Ibn Sīnā (d. 1037) dedicates a chapter to love sickness, in which he portrays ‘ishq as a sort of illness similar to melancholia. He describes the characteristics of the illness as:

- hollowness of the eyes and their dryness, the lack of moisture except when weeping, continuous movement of the eyelids, and laughing as if he sees something pleasant or hears happy news or jokes. His psyche is full of alienation and withdrawal, so that there is much deep sighing. His condition changes from exhilaration and laughter to sadness and weeping when he hears love poetry, especially when he remembers the separation and distance from his beloved (...) His behaviour is disordered, and his pulse is irregular, like those who are anxious.

The link provided by Ibn Sīnā between the lover’s sadness and love poetry is noteworthy. By establishing such a link, he suggests a bond between emotions and language. The language, especially in form of poetry, revives the passionate feeling. Therefore, the role played by poetry in love is significant.

Ibn Sīnā goes on to give advice to doctors on how to cure the patient. He suggests, for instance, the uniting of the lover with his beloved, saying about to one

---

10 Dols, p. 316.
11 Biesterfeldt and Gutas, p. 23.
case, ‘when he experienced union with his beloved, recovery occurred in a very short time’\(^\text{13}\). He also suggests several different treatments, depending on each individual condition such as: preoccupying the lover’s mind so that he forgets what caused him to be seriously ill\(^\text{14}\), or joining the lover with someone other than the beloved in order that he forgets the latter, or giving the lover sincere advice or warning, or increasing sexual intercourse with slave-girls. Ibn Sīnā also states, ‘Some people are consoled with entertainment and recitation, while for others it only increases their infatuation; it is possible to discover which is which’\(^\text{15}\). Consequently, Ibn Sīnā’s statement shows that ‘ishq became a typical topic in Islamic medical textbooks, alongside other mental disorders\(^\text{16}\).

In belles-lettres the malady of love was a subject frequently treated. For example, al-Jahiz (ca. 776-869) states that:

> I propose to describe ‘ishq for you, so that you may know how it is defined. It is a sickness that attacks the soul and spreads to the body by direct contagion, the soul being weakened by the violence done to the body and physical exhaustion being followed by moral weakness\(^\text{17}\).

In al-Jahiz’s statement, cited above, he sharply distinguishes between the soul and the body, though he does observe the mutual effects between them. Love, in his view, attacks the soul first and then spreads to the body, but once the body becomes weak, the soul is affected by this weakness. Abu Bakr Muḥammad b. Da‘ūd (255/868-297/910) devotes a chapter, ‘The body’s pining is a sign of agony

\(^\text{13}\) Ibid.

\(^\text{14}\) The famous physician al-Rāzī (d. 313/925) suggests a similar treatments for melancholia, which include active endeavours such as hunting, chess, drinking, singing, competitive sports, travel and other things. See Dols, p. 55.

\(^\text{15}\) Ibid., p. 485. Interestingly, the practice of pulse-diagnosis, which has been suggested by Ibn Sīnā to know the identity of the beloved, was employed with considerable effect by the great mystical poet Jalal al-Dīn Rumi, in one of his allegorical stories. See Dols, p. 317.

\(^\text{16}\) However, the medical interpretation of ‘ishq was especially welcomed by those writers who wished to discourage passionate love. See Giffen, p. 64.

(kamad)’, to this aspect in his book, *Kitāb al-zahrāh*. He explains the effect of emotion on the body, from a medical perspective: ‘the heat that is engendered by grief flows into the heart from all parts of the body and then ascends to the brain’\(^{18}\). He also mentions the particular role played by tears in this matter: ‘vapours from which tears are produced when they (scil. the vapours) are liquefied by the natural heat they possess’\(^{19}\). Abū Bakr al-Khara‘ītī (d. 327/938) was also tempted to write on the subject, but rather adopted a more critical point of view; he entitles his treatise *I‘titāl al-qulūb* (*The Malady of Hearts*). Form the title it is apparent that the author views love as a malady, and a chapter of his treatise is even entitled: ‘On the condemnation of *hawa* (desire) and the following of it’. ‘Four centuries later, Ibn al-Jawzī, Ibn Qayyim al-Jauziyyah and al-Mughulī cite him as an authority on love theory’\(^{20}\). In *Kitāb al-riyād* by Muḥammad al-Marzubānī (384/993 or 378/987) a definition of ‘*ishq* that links it with malady is provided; ‘Someone said to Zuhayr al-Madīnī: “What is ‘*ishq*?” He said: “Madness and submissiveness, and it is the malady of refined people”\(^{21}\). Abū Ḥayyān al-Tawḥīdī (d. 414/1023) in *al-Muqābasat* suggests that love feeds the soul, but weakens the body\(^{22}\).

In any case, the literary production on this subject is too abundant to be documented in detail here. However, I will concentrate on one text, anonymously authored, quoting it at length because it provides a comprehensive view on the subject under discussion and has been frequently quoted by many authors:

> Love is a desire which is born in the heart and in which gather elements of avidity. Whenever it gains in strength the lover becomes more agitated and

---

18 Ibn Da‘ūd, p. 400.
20Giffen, p. 16.
persistent, his disquiet intensifies and his insomnia increases. When this happen his blood burns and changes into black bile, and his yellow bile is inflamed and transformed into black bile. The excess of black bile impairs thinking, and impaired thinking is accompanied by blunted wits, diminished reasoning, hoping for the impossible, and wishing for the unfeasible, to the point that it all leads to madness. Then, the lover sometimes kills himself and sometimes dies of grief, or he goes to his beloved and dies of joy or perishes of distress. Sometimes he moans heavily, causing his spirit to remain concealed for twenty-four hours. He continues [in his state] until he is taken for dead, and he is then buried while still alive. Sometimes he heaves a deep sigh and his soul is stifled in his pericardium. The heart then closes then on the soul and does not release it until he dies. Sometimes during moments of relaxation he raises his eyes to look around and he suddenly sees the person he loves his blood drains and his colour changes. The person who is in such a state can be relieved through the grace of the Lord of the Worlds, not through the ministrations of any human. This is because a malignant state which occurs from an isolated cause arising by itself is susceptible to through elimination by the elimination by its cause. But when two causes occur in such a manner that each one of them occasions the other, there is no way in which either one of them can be eliminated. And since black bile causes continuous thinking and continuous thinking causes the burning of the blood and the yellow bile and their transformation into black bile, then whenever the black bile predominates it intensifies thinking, and whenever thinking becomes intense it reinforces the black bile. This is an incurable disease which doctors are unable to treat.

This text has had a long and influential life in the literary tradition. It appears in different lengths and in several different versions, and is reproduced in many Arabic books beginning in the third century AH, such as Nawādir al-falāṣīfah by Ḥunayn b. Ishāq (d. 260/877), Kitāb al-zahrā by Abū Bakr Muḥammad b. Dāʾūd al-Īṣfahānī (d. 297/910), Murūj al-dhahab by al-Masʿūdī (d. 354/956), Dhamm al-hawa by Ibn al-Jawzī (d. 597/1200), ‘Uyun al-anba’ by Ibn Abī Usaybi’ah (d. 668/1270). It is said to be copied from the Greek, though the Greek original is absent. In any case, this text presents well-structured aspects and it shows the great awareness of the emotional effects on one’s own body. I would argue that it proves that the lover’s body was a theme of interest on a theoretical level according to the popular subject of love in classical Arabic belles-lettres. The text suggests a mutual relationship

---

24 Some of the Arab authors ascribe the text to Hippocrates.
25 Biesterfeldt and Gutas, p. 45, and see detailed discussion on the origin of the text on pp. 51-53, in which the author tends to believe that it is diverted from a late Alexandrian text.
between the lover’s excessive emotions and his body. Once the love ‘is born in the heart’, it attacks the lover’s body; his insomnia increases and ‘his blood burns’. At this point the effect will return to ‘thinking’ that causes ‘blunted wits, diminished reasoning and hoping for the impossible’, which will eventually lead the lover to madness or death. The concept of death is a crucial aspect of passionate love (‘ishq) and it is clearly emphasised here. Death, the text suggests, will undoubtedly reach the lover, either as a result of his grief or of his joy if he suddenly beholds his beloved. Biesterfeldt and Gutas provide the following commentary on the text:

[this text] ascribes to the lover a number of symptoms(…). It has a medical framework. It analyses love by means of humoral etiology; and it makes use of popular and literary commonplaces about love much as the as a genre deal with everyday concerns.

If that is the case, it is no wonder that the lover, as shown in Arabic literature, is treated as a patient, as we have already observed in some medical texts, such as Treatise on Love by Ibn Sīnā, in which he provides a discussion of the symptoms and suggested treatments for the lover. Moreover, it seems that Arabs used to carry out particular practices when dealing with suffering lovers; their love would be treated either as a sickness or as a kind of magic. Therefore, the lover would be taken to physicians and diviners, as we shall see in ‘Urwah and Majnūn’s stories. In some cases, the lover has to drink ‘sulwānah’, which is believed to be a cure for ‘ishq. Sulwānah is an amulet in a crushed bead whose liquid is drunk by an afflicted lover to cure him of this love. Seeing love from this angle explains the motif of dedicating prayers to the lover, as one would pray for a sick man. Interestingly, al-Washsha‘ considers praying for lovers as a duty of udāba‘; he provides many

---

26 This chapter will elaborate the theme of love unto death within the ‘udhri tradition.
27 Ibid., p. 53.
28 Salamah, p. 456.
narratives about people who offer *duʿāʾ* for the lovers while they circumambulate the *kaʿbah*. He even states that: ‘It is claimed that no sins will be inflicted on lovers and that the pains they endure compensate for their sins’. Answering a question about lovers, the Judge Shurayk b. ‘Abdullah said: ‘whoever possesses the most intense feelings of love will receive the biggest share of the rewards’.

### 7.3 The Effect of Love on the Lover’s Body in the ‘Udhri Tradition

Above, we have sketched the classical Arabic theoretical perspective on the effects of emotion on the body. Yet the physical presence of the lover’s own body can also be traced in poetry. In fact, most of those authors who deal with the theme of love in their writing rely on Arabic poetry as a primary source for their theoretical formulations. ‘The best discussion of love turns frequently to verse to illustrate aptly the ideas under discussion, to reinforce the author’s statements, or to express his thought more subtly’. This chapter focuses on the depiction of the lover’s body in the ‘udhri’ tradition while making reference to classical Arabic poetry in general.

Several aspects of the effect that love has on the ‘udhri’ lover’s own body are depicted in *al-ghazal al-‘udhri*. These aspects are intertwined, but for the sake of this analysis we separate them into categories each of which is discussed below.

---

31 Ibid., p. 108.
32 It should be borne in mind that the awareness of the bodily effect of love as shown in literature is not unique to the Arabs. In the introduction written by John Jay Parry of the book *The Art of Courtly Love* some of the relevant ideas within the Western culture are presented. The poet Ovid, who lived in Rome in the time of the Emperor Augustus and among his poems are *The Art of Love* and *The Cure of Love*, states that for love of a woman the lover must become pale and thin and sleepless. See Andreas Capellanus, *The Art of Courtly Love*, trans. John Jay Parry (New York: Columbia University Press, 1941), p. 5.
33 Giffen, p. 57. Giffen points out that some authors such as; Ibn Daʾūd began to collect verses on a subject or idea, comparing different ways of expressing the same idea. This critical activity lent itself to refined awareness of the whole spectrum of emotions, situations, and experiences of love, p. 58.
7.3.1 Crying

Tear-shedding is no doubt a response to the body’s agitation as it releases the burden of emotions on the body. It is also one of the bodily responses to emotions. The theme of weeping is one of the oldest themes in classical Arabic poetry. It is considered an essential motif in the opening section of the qasīdah; the poet stops at the ruined campsite, which evokes his memories and leads him to weep over his now departed beloved. In fact, weeping and asking friends to weep became a core element of the classical qasīdah after Imru’ al-Qays said:

Halt, friends both! Let us weep, recalling a love and a lodging by the rim of the twisted sands between al-Dakhūl and Ḥaumal

More broadly, but with relevance to the trope of weeping, Sells demonstrates that there are dynamic polarities of water within Arabic love poetry. Water could suggest sexual union and climax or purification,

- fertility and growth or erosion and effacement; the poet (through tears) or the beloved (through her wet mouth); the interior, subjective world (through the shu’un or tear channels behind the eyes) or the exterior world (through the torrent beds mada‘ār) or the tent trench (nu‘y)

In ‘udhri poets’ diwans there are numerous allusions to weeping. It seems that shedding tears -- according to ‘udhri poets’ -- functions in several ways: divulgence, resistance, evidence and healing. Tears are a divulgence and a disclosure of the poet’s feelings, and of what his heart is incapable of bearing. His feelings are expressed in the form of tears, revealing a hidden pain and a concealed love. No

---

34 Al-Yūsuf sees the tears in poetry as the most common element between ‘udhri poets in Arab culture, and the metaphysical poets in Western culture, by giving the example of the poet John Donne (1572-1631). See al-Yusuf, p. 176.
36 Sells, p. 157.
matter how this lover struggles to conceal his love, tears remain the most vivid traces and indicators of love; Jamīl says:

Oh my friends, what I conceal of this love, tears will soon reveal

Weeping is evidence and proof of the poet’s sincere feelings. In the above stanza the poet uses the word *shahīd* to mean *shaḥīd* which means proof, and Majnūn explicitly refers to this:

The representation of the passion of youth is made through tears and these tears are the fairest evidence

Kuthayyir not only indulges in tears; he also invites his eyes to drop tears to prove his love and concealed passion:

I ask the water of the eye to continue hoping that it will be a witness to that concealed passion

Qays even linked the level of love to the amount of tears dropped, making the relationship between them mutual:

Is love but a sigh then a sob, and a heating in the guts that finds no cooling And a river of running tears when I behold a hint from your land

Moreover, according to ‘*udhrī* poetry, weeping is a cure and a comfort. It is a means to healing the acute pains of love:

I was told of her abandonment, and asked to choose between patience and weeping And I chose to weep for its immediate effect to heal my burns

However, weeping does not always indicate weakness and disclosure; it sometimes becomes like a weapon of the lover, used to resist his society’s oppression.

Therefore, even if this oppressive society stops Buthaynah from meeting Jamīl and

37 Jamīl, p. 25
38 Majnūn, p. 77. Note how he used the word *dāhil*, proof, and the link he made between this word and the word tears, p. 170.
39 Kuthayyir, p. 78.
40 Qays, p. 43.
41 Kuthayyir, p. 180.
Lubnā from meeting Qays, it cannot stop them from expressing their emotions and weeping in agony. Majnūn provides us with a poetic image that endows tears with a significant psychological dimension:

What runs down from the eye is not its water
But a soul which melts and drips.

The ‘udhrī poem presents tears as the destined and inevitable fate of lovers. Tears represent disclosure, resistance, witness, or a means of healing from the agonies of love; they are present on a permanent basis. The ‘udhrī poet asserts the continuity of his tears through a range of figural possibilities, as tears are like a river that does not stop flowing and a well that does not dry up. The simile between the tears and the clouds depends on related imagery, of flows. Qays presents a rather distinctive image of the lover who is indifferent to the shift from day to night. As soon as his night tears dry up, his day tears replace them:

If we run out of tears in the evening,
a new wave of tears will come along with the dawn.

This frequent reference to weeping in ‘udhrī poetry does not seem to require further justification from the poet. We already have seen how Qays describes it as equal to love itself. Tears are stimulated by memories:

O Laylá, the flow of tears is rather spontaneous
when I remember you alone.

And is also stimulated by the absence of the beloved:

I never knew before ‘Azzah what weeping is,
nor did I know what agonies of the heart are until she left.

---

42 Jamīl, p. 46, Qays, p. 51.
44 Kuthayyir, pp. 112, 114.
45 Kuthayyir, p. 180, Jamīl, p. 97, Majnūn, p. 159
46 Qays, p. 66.
47 Majnūn, p. 147.
48 Kuthayyir, p. 54.
Qays confirms that he cries over the loss of his beloved and he sees tears as a natural response to the absence of the companion:

I cry, yes I cry as all other lovers
who cry over the loss of their beloved ones[49] [13]

‘Urwah also says:

Do you every day aim for her country
with eyes in which the pupils are drowning?[50] [14]

In the case of the absence of his beloved, the poet never lacks reminders of her that stimulate his tears and the ardour of his love. These reminders could be natural elements like fire[51], air[52] and water[53]. These reminders could also be animal creatures like doves[54] and crows—as Majnūn’s eyes, for instance, drop tears when hearing the sound of crows[55]. The blowing of the breeze, the cooing of the dove, the cawing of crows, the glittering of the thunder; all these are also reminders that stimulate the poet’s nostalgia and passionate feelings. It is enough to Majnūn to hear the name Layla to make him wet his shawl with tears[56].

However, the stimulation of tears is not confined to the absence of the beloved; it is also attributed to her presence:

As soon as the eyes behold her,

[49] Qays, p. 112, and look at his Diwān, p. 74. Majnūn also relates his image to that of a child when weeping for Layā, Majnūn, p. 132 and look at his Diwān, p.75.
[53] The flowing stream moves Majnūn to tears, Majnūn, p. 28. But the same poem is also attributed to al-`Abbas b. al-Aḥnaf, p. 47.
[55] Majnūn, p. 62. For their indication of the black omen of separation, Salāmah explains that crows in Arab culture refer to two different indications: 1. the Quranic crow that is seen as a post bird, delegated by God to Qabil to teach him funeral rituals and that delegated to Noah to obtain news of the flood; 2. the literary crow that brings the bad omen of separation and loss when it makes sounds, and that is often signified in Arabic poetry. Salāmah, pp. 297-298.
they drop tears while keeping a still look towards her. The lover does not see any conflict in this as long as weeping forms a genuine element of his overall perception of love and self-expression. Whether his beloved is present or absent, he is always agonised and facing tears and sadness. He cries in fear of her alienation or abandonment. He cries when she approaches and when she departs as there is no limit to his sadness and no hindrance to his tears. He cries until the tears turn into blood:

My eyes would still drop running tears or blood – if my eyes accede to my wishes.

The poet even attributes to his beloved the ability to make him sad and make his tears turn into blood:

Oh ‘Afrā’ how much bitterness you made me feel and how many times you made my eyes tear If one lover’s eye is to drop blood instead, my eye would be the first.

The theme of tears turning into blood became a popular one in love poetry later on; Abū Tammām (d. 232/846), for instance, says:

You have taken me past the limits of pain Because of you my tears of blood never cease.

We should bear in mind that such poetic images contain violence where passion is linked to blood. Blood bears indications of killing and bloodshed. Love causes blood to drop from the eyes and the body of the lover when targeted by the arrows of lovesickness and deprivation. This idea is also linked to the idea of passion itself as a

---

57 Kuthayyir, p. 64.
58 Majnun, p. 133.
60 ‘Urwah, p. 48. Poetic hyperbole in depicting tears occur frequently in classical Arabic poetry; for example, al-‘Abbas b. al-Ahnaf cries until his tears irrigate the soil and the grass grows, al-‘Abbas b. al-Ahnaf, Diwan, p. 62.
power that is closer to hatred than to affection in its violence and intensity\textsuperscript{62}. Within the same context Bataille wonders: ‘What does physical eroticism signify if not a violation of the very being of its practitioners? - a violation bordering on death, bordering on murder?’\textsuperscript{63}

It is impossible in this context to avoid thinking of tears as liquid that extinguishes fires. It means that the connotation of tears contradicts that of fire. Fire is seen as the main image adopted by the power of love. Fire, according to human imagination, has different connotations, such as purifying fire or lust fire. Other synonyms of love that bear a similar power to that of fire are burning, the ardour of love, and acrimony\textsuperscript{64}. Fires inside the lover reach the extent of being capable of melting iron with the lover’s frenzied breaths\textsuperscript{65}. The image of the passionate fires recalls the image of thirst and the need for cooling water. Hence, ‘udhri\textsuperscript{@} poets describe themselves as thirsty in expression of their thirst and yearning towards the beloved. Qays explicitly describes himself as thirsty when referring to his yearning for Lubna:

>See the parched birds which circle round the water night and day, but for fear being beaten never drink their fill or come close to the cool ponds  
>They see the froth of the water and death together and are attentive to the voices of the water bearers  
>They are no more afflicted than I am with the heat of longing and ardour but the enemy has hindered me\textsuperscript{66} \[19\]

\textsuperscript{62} The lover might reach levels of hatred towards his beloved, as described in the ‘udhri\textsuperscript{@} poetry: the ‘udhri\textsuperscript{@} poet who wished death to his beloved, Al-Isfahani, vol. 1, p. 155.  
\textsuperscript{63} Bataille, p. 17. This is understandable even with the passion fulfilled itself as it ‘provokes such violent agitation that the happiness involved, before being the happiness to be enjoyed, it is so great as to be more like its opposite, suffering’. Bataille, p. 19.  
\textsuperscript{64} For the link between love and fire, see Salamah, p. 54.  
\textsuperscript{65} Majnun, p.30.  
\textsuperscript{66} Qays, p. 155. See my comment on these verses in chapter ‘‘Udhri\textsuperscript{@}Tradition: Between Chastity and Sensuality’, p. 70.
Majnūn links the image of water with that of fire in a contradictory poetic depiction:

If my sighs are to reach the sea;
the sea will dry up due to its burning flame[^67]  

[^20]

Jamil links Buthynah’s fire to the water of his eyes:

Your tears become plentiful
as Buthynah's tent fire loomed up ahead of you[^68]  

[^21]

It is important to note that the fire attributed to Buthynah refers to two different things: one is that the fire that is lit for warming or guiding and that is the apparent meaning; the second and deeper meaning is the metaphoric fire that inflames the poet’s feelings which he tries to confront by plentiful tears. Through the tears of lovers, we can attribute love, passion and thirst to a power generated by fire. Tears are seen not only as expressions of love; they rather represent the overall power of love, for tears are the water that quenches fire. But tears are also the result of this burning power of love[^69].

It is noteworthy that the theme of fire is prominent in some of the anecdotes ascribed to the ‘udhrī poets. For example, *Kitāb al-aghani* presents a scene in which fire and nudity of the lover’s body are connected. Majnūn--the anecdotes shows--was seeking fire while wrapped in a cloak, Laylā brought out the fire in a rag for him and they stood conversing. When the rag burned out, Majnūn tore a piece from his cloak and lit it instead. Then he tore another and another until nothing remained of the cloak[^70]. Khan observes that:

The exchange of words (language) between the lovers is made simultaneous with the burning of fire as well as the denuding of the male’s lover’s body. Burning of fire and baring of body her act as metaphors for linguistic expression

[^67]: Majnūn, p. 30.
[^68]: Jamil, p. 48.
[^69]: Salamah, p. 58.
[^70]: Al-İsfahani, vol. 2, p. 348
(...). Laylā is both the spark that ignites his desire and the night that is unveiled by his passion\(^{71}\).

The theoretical paradigm enhances the theme of the crying lover; one of the chapters in Ibn Da‘ūd’s book *al-zahrah*, is entitled: ‘who could not find the solace, his weeping increases’. In this chapter he explains that the only true tears are those of a genuine lover; an artificial lover could claim love but without any explicit evidence of tears from his eyes. On the other hand, Ibn Ḥazm, relying on his personal experience, argues that it is true that ‘weeping is well-known sign of love’; he explains by adding:

> except that men differ very greatly from one another in this particular. Some are ready weepers; their tear-ducts are always over flowing, and their eyes respond immediately to their emotions, the tears rolling down at a moment’s notice. Others are dry-eyed and barren of tears; to this category I myself belong.\(^{72}\)

Salamāh’s claim that for the sake of theorise the passionate love, it has been prated from the individual’s experience\(^{73}\). However, Ibn Ḥazm’s statement quoted above contradicts with Salamāh’s assertion by confirming that those who wrote on the subject of love did not ignore individual experiences in their endeavour to theorise love.

### 7.3.2 Malady and Wasting Away

The language that contains references to sickness, wasting away, paleness, malady, (*kabid maquřah*) the damaged liver, and physicians is very conventional in Arabic love discourse. Salamāh refers to two main aspects in the relationship between love and moderation, where love is either linked to other known diseases or is seen in

\(^{71}\) Khan, p. 159.

\(^{72}\) Ibn Ḥazm, pp. 42-43.

\(^{73}\) Salamah, p. 319.
itself as an illness. The other manifestation of love’s link to diseases is in the vocabulary that is commonly used to refer to both love and disease: *shagaf, jawā, ‘amad, khabal, kalaf and wala*. The word *huyām*, for example, means passion but is also used to refer to a type of fever that affects camels and causes them to experience a burning thirst. ‘Urwah begins by describing his *huyām* as a disease:

> I am attacked by either despair or the disease of passion (*huyām*).  
> So you ought to refrain from approaching me lest the disease affects you.

Love seems to be linked to tuberculosis, Muḥammad b. al-Zubayr said: ‘while with ‘Urwah b. al-Zubayr, I heard him saying to a fellow from ‘Udhrah’s tribe: You people have the most tender hearts. The fellow replied: Yes, I have left over thirty there with tuberculosis and they have no disease but love. The link between emotions and tuberculosis is not confined to love, but also to hatred which indicates the bodily influence of emotions. Ziyād b. Abīh in his sermon said: ‘If I learnt that some of you died from tuberculosis that was a result of hating me, I would not reveal your secrets unless you acted upon this hatred.

The ‘udhri poet ‘Urwah’s story is typical in this manner. He was promised his beloved cousin ‘Afra if he became wealthy; so he went away to seek wealth, but during his absence ‘Afra was married off to another man who took her to Syria. Her father went to an old grave, restored it and put it in order and asked the tribe to keep the matter secret. When ‘Urwah arrived, ‘Afra’s father told him that she had died and took him to the grave. ‘Urwah remained there for several days, wasting away and

---

74 Ibid., p. 130.  
75 See Salamah’s diagram for these terms and their links to other diseases, pp.133-134.  
76 ‘Urwah, p. 53. This verse is also ascribed to Majnun, p. 229. 229. Note his use of the adjective *Ha‘īm* (passionate) in association with the noun *‘atāb* (wreck) that tatters his body, p. 25.  
slowly perishing, until a girl from the tribe came to him and told him what had happened. There are several accounts of what followed, but it is significant how all the accounts insist on ‘Urwah’s sickness and death. In these verses, addressing his friends, he reveals the desperate physical condition of his body:

If you would take off my shirt from me you would clearly see how much I have suffered on account of ‘Afrā’, my friends! Then you would see little flesh, decaying bones, and a heart perpetually palpitating.

His relatives tried to cure him as they would any sick person. In one version of his story in *al-Aghani* it is stated that

he left ‘Afrā’ and returned to his people, wasted and thin. He had sisters, a maternal aunt and a grandmother, who began to admonish him, but it did not have any effect. They took him to Abū Kuhaylah Rabāḥ b. Shaddād, the client of the Banū Thu‘aylah, who was the diviner of Hajr, so that he could treat him. But his treatment did not have any effect on him.

In another account, he

would go to the water cisterns where the camels of ‘Afrā’ would come to drink, and then would press his breast against them. People would say to him, “Take it easy, for you’ll kill yourself! Fear God!” But he would not accept their advice, until finally he was nearly done for and felt death approaching. Then he said, I despair: I have been given to drink the sickness of passionate love. Be warned by me, lest you will have what I suffer.

Of ‘Urwah, it has often been said that ‘nothing but his shadow (ghost, phantom) was left’. The attention that the narrator (*ra̲w̲i*) focused on ‘Urwah’s bad health as a result of passionate love is significant in these accounts. In the last account quoted above, his relatives seek the medical advice of an expert, but the latter is useless in curing such a great sickness. We might recall here what Ibn Da‘ūd said about those who are

---

79 See the full story in al-Isfahānī, vol. 24, pp. 283-298.
80 *Urwah*, p. 36, trans. Van Gelder.
love-sick: ‘This is an incurable disease which doctors are unable to treat.’\(^{83}\) `Urwah puts his story, detailing the attempt to cure him, in a poetic form:

I left it to the diviner of al-Yamāmah to name his fee,  
and the diviner of Ḥajr, if only they could cure me.  
They have left no trick they knew untried,  
no potion but they gave it me to drink.  
They sprinkled water on my face for a while  
and were quick to visit me, with those who visit the sick.  
They said: May God cure you! By God, we have no power  
over what your ribs contain.\(^{84}\)

In fact, the word (marad) illness is frequently associated with the word physician (tabīb) in al-ghazal al-‘udrī. Apparently, as `Urwah declared in the verses above, the suffering lover is seeking the cure from the physicians or the diviners. But the lover-poet then states that both physicians and diviners are hopeless in his case. On one hand, he has no choice but death or patience; Majnūn says:

Two physicians!  
Were you to treat me I would reward you both,  
so why do you forgo the fee?  
They said sadly:  
‘Nothing can help you so either die of grief,  
or strengthen yourself with patience.’\(^{85}\)

On the other hand, the lover-poet implies that he knows his cure; it is not medical treatment but his beloved:

Laylā’s family have made me long for her  
and today I have no cure except in Laylā\(^{86}\)

Jamil also declares:

O Buthayna, show some generosity  
and requite your suffering lover and salve his maladies and pains! \(^{87}\)

---

\(^{83}\) Ibn Dā‘ūd, cited and translation by Biesterfeldt and Gutas, p. 45.  
\(^{85}\) Majnūn, 123, and see also Qays, p. 23.  
\(^{86}\) Majnūn, p. 29.  
\(^{87}\) Jamil, p. 53.
If the beloved blessed the lover just once with a visit while he was sick, because of his love for her, then there would be nothing left for him to desire in this life and would therefore be happy to die. Qays says:

Qays was treated for the love of Lubnā, which was his sickness, and love is a terrible sickness. When the women came to visit me one day my eye said: ‘I see not the one I desire.’ If only Lubnā would visit me, then I would gladly die but she comes not amongst those who visit[28] 88

Qays believes love to be (daʾ shādīd), a terrible malady. According to ‘udhri poetry all the malady’s symptoms are obvious in the lover: paleness, thinness, feverous and thirst. As for paleness and wasting away, Qays illustrates this point:

Love has signs that are patent in a youth
He becomes pale and his knuckles stick out from his hands[29] 89

His usage of the word ‘signs’ is noteworthy in this context; it shows that the idea of proving love by using bodily symptoms was already circulating in Arabic culture in Qays's time. One should bear in mind that this idea became very conventional in Arabic love theory. Both Ibn Dāʾūd and al-Washshaʾ, for instance, consider the emaciated body to be evidence of true love: in his book, Kitāb al-zahrā, Ibn Dāʾūd devotes a whole chapter to this, entitled: ‘The body’s pining is a sign of agony (kamad)’. He explains the effect of emotion on the body from a medical perspective: ‘the heat that is engendered by grief flows into the heart from all parts of the body and then ascends to the brain’[90].

There are many tales in Maṣāʾrīʿ al-ʿushṣāq that enhance the theme of the sick-lover. In one account, al-Sarrāj narrates that a slave girl who is loved by a pious youth sends him a red rose, which he straps to his upper arm as he lies on his death-

88 Qays, p. 41.
89 Qays, p. 66. Kuthayyir also says: ‘That Dūmrī’s daughter is asking me: why you are pale’. Kuthayyir, p. 223.
bed\textsuperscript{91}. Considering the ‘\textit{udhrī} tradition, there are frequent references to the theme of wasting away in Majnūn’s story and his poetry alike. For example, he claims:

\begin{quote}
I have had so much hardship with her
that I melted with passion and my bones turned to dust\textsuperscript{92}
\end{quote}

Here he ascribes extraordinary effects to love. Love is like death in which the bones become feeble. Sura 36 in the Quran reads: ‘And he makes comparisons for Us, and forgets his own (origin and) Creation: He says, “Who can give life to (dry) bones and decomposed ones (at that)?”. Say, “He will give them life Who created them for the first time! for He is Well-versed in every kind of creation”\textsuperscript{93}. Majnūn’s use of religious lexicon is also evident when he enquires about whether it is lawful for Layla\textsuperscript{94} to hurt his body or not. Jamīl, likewise, pleads Buthaynah to fear God and not to kill her lover\textsuperscript{95}.

We have already emphasised the theme of thirst in ‘\textit{udhrī} tradition\textsuperscript{96}. In this context it seems that the thirst is one of the signs of malady caused by love, Qays cries:

\begin{quote}
I have suffered such a trial with Lubna
that no drop will pass my lips\textsuperscript{97}
\end{quote}

The love-sickness is so intense that it can even melt the lover’s soul and not just his body, ‘Urwah declares:

\begin{quote}
We suffer in the breast a love-pain (anguish) from the sickness of sorrows
for which a pitying soul would almost melt.
But a once strong body has left only the last breath of someone
who laments over what he suffers\textsuperscript{98}
\end{quote}

\begin{itemize}
\item \textsuperscript{91} Al-Sarraj, vol. 1, p. 16.
\item \textsuperscript{92} Majnun, p. 201.
\item \textsuperscript{93} Ya Sin (36: 77-78).
\item \textsuperscript{94} Majnun, p. 137.
\item \textsuperscript{95} Jamil, p. 52.
\item \textsuperscript{96} See chapter 2 and the previous section in this chapter.
\item \textsuperscript{97} Qays, p. 20.
\item \textsuperscript{98} Al-İsfahani, vol. 24, p. 297, trans. Van Gelder.
\end{itemize}
Jamil clearly associates ‘udhri‘ love with slenderness, he says, criticising a man called Ja‘far who was eating while claiming that he is in love:

Ja‘far surprises me! He avidly eats my loaf of bread, while shedding tears because of Juml [a girl’s name]
If your attachment were ‘udhrite you would not eat your belly full: love would have made you forget gorging yourself

In any case, it is significant how the theme of emaciation of the lover becomes essential in classical Arabic ghazal poetry. There are endless examples that confirm the importance of this theme, but studying them is beyond the scope of this chapter. I would rather give a few examples from some famous Abbasid poets. Al-‘Abbäs b. al-Ahnaf, for instance, declares:

All that love for her has left of me is a last gasp in a gaunt body

In this verse, al-Mutanabbi is not only wasting away, because of love, but he is also proud of this thinness and indeed of anyone who is thin:

For love of you I truly love my emaciation, and every emaciated man

Bashshar b. Burd took the image of a thin lover to a new extent:

In my cloak there is an emaciated body Were you to lean upon it, it would crumble

---

99 Jamil, p. 82, cited in Greet Jan Van Gelder, Of Dishes and Discourse Classical Arabic Literary Representations of Food (Richmond: Curzon Press, 2000), p. 112. However, in other reports active love and a good appetite are deemed perfectly compatible. The famous ‘Ayshah b. Talhah is impressed by one of her several husbands and says to him admiringly the morning after their wedding night: ‘I have never seen anyone like you; you have eaten as much as seven men, prayed as much as seven men, and fucked as much as seven men’, See Van Gelder, p. 112.

100 Al-‘Abbäs b. al-Ahnaf, p. 130, trans. Hamori, p. 213.


Interestingly, although Bashshār was reported to be a large man in real life, he abides by the poetic conventions, which depict the lover as emaciated. Some subsequent poets provided more hyperbole images; al-Ḥasan b. Wahab, for instance, said:

You have worn out my body which was once strong – now your eye can barely perceive it\(^\text{103}\) [37]

### 7.3.3 Insomnia

The lexicon of the long nights, the sleepless lover, the unrelenting stars and the abandoned beds is common in the ‘udhri poets’ discourse. As passionate love associates the lover’s body with sickness, weeping and wasting away, it also links it to insomnia. Majnūn addresses his companions or the travelers ‘who spent their nights in melancholy contemplation of the starlit sky’\(^\text{104}\):

\[
\begin{align*}
&\text{O herders of the nightly flock,} \\
&\text{What has the morning done,} \\
&\text{And what is s pthreade heralds?} \\
&\text{And those who hold captive my heart,} \\
&\text{What do they care} \\
&\text{Whether they alight or once again set out?} \\
&\text{And unrelenting stars, suspended} \\
&\text{From a lover’s heart,} \\
&\text{What do they care? (…)} \\
&\text{O herders of the nightly flock,} \\
&\text{Mind me no more,} \\
&\text{My fated love has slain me well}^{105} \\
\end{align*}
\]

Majnūn’s expression: ‘unrelenting stars, suspended from a lover’s heart’ is worthy of notice here. Stars are pieces of nature yet they are linked with the lover’s suffering; they do not exemplify light and shining, they merely illustrate how long the lover’s night is. However, it seems that the motif of slow-wheeling stars was already

---


\(^{104}\) Stetkevych, p. 162.

established in Arabic poetry before the emergence of the ‘udhri tradition; the pre-Islamic poet al-Nâbighah al-Dhubyâni ‘despairs of the morning star, as pastor, ever bringing in his herds’:

Leave me, O Umaymah, to wearisome care
And to a night of slow-wheeling
Stars that I bear-
A night that stretched on till I said:
It will not end,
And he who herds the stars will not return

Afterwards, the motif of herders of the stars that have not returned became very common in the Arabic ghazal. Many poets used this image to illustrate their long sleepless nights. The famous Abbasid poet Abū Tammām, for instance, says:

Many a night I spent keeping watch
as if mortally wounded,
Or sleepless over one by viper stung
Of its stars I pastured
white, free-grazing camels,
That do not return to him
who in the pasture frees them
But had you asked the dark of night about me,
I swear,
Of a great passion it would have brought you news

Abū Tammām here uses the image of a wounded or stung person, who cannot sleep because of his physical pain, in order to demonstrate this emotional pain. He asks his beloved to ask the dark night about him to prove that his sleeplessness is because of his great passion. But the image of a wounded or stung person is not new; Abū Tammām was reiterating an earlier Arabic sensibility. Long before him, al-Nâbighah

---

106 Stetkevych, p. 148.
108 Cited in Stetkevych, p. 156. It is noteworthy, however, that many poets link insomnia with pain in different contexts. In elegy poetry, many poets emphasise the theme of insomnia as an integral part of their grief over the loss of a dear person. See, for example, diwan al-Khansa’ where she enhances this aspect in many ways. On the other hand, al-Nâbighah al-Dhubyâni expresses his fear of the king al-Nu’man by demonstrating that he could not sleep as he has been stung by a snake.
al-Dhubyānī used the same image but with more details\(^{109}\). And then we find the ‘udhri̇ poet Qays declaring the following:

It seems that because of Lubnā
I am as one stung and sleepless and walk dizzily,
supported by men’s arms \(^{10}\) [41]

In other verses he wonders how it is possible for a man to sleep while he is suffering from great passion and dolour\(^{111}\). ‘Urwah asks his friends to describe what sleep is because his longing for his beloved thwarted his chances of tasting it\(^{112}\). Hence, the longing for the beloved is considered the most essential reason for insomnia among the ‘udhri̇ poets; this can be seen when Jamīl reveals that the exhaustive longing and the memory of his beloved have prevented him from sleeping\(^{113}\). However, when it comes to Majnūn, it seems that the experience of insomnia is a crucial one in his experience of love; thus it is not just associated with the absence of his beloved:

I find no solace in being far away nor any benefit in proximity
My nights are long and my insomnia is hard\(^{114}\) [42]

Similar to some other poets, who present themselves as the star’s herder; Majnūn presents himself as a herder of al-Thurayyi̇a and al-Farqadān, which are names of stars, simply because he is in love\(^{115}\). Furthermore, while true believers, according to the Quran, abandon their beds because of their fear of God\(^{116}\), Majnūn abandons his bed because of his love for Laylā:

Do you, because of a shining traveler in the darkness of the night,
refuse a soft bed out of fear of separation?\(^{117}\) [43]

\(^{109}\) When expressing his fear of the king al-Nu’man.

\(^{110}\) Qays, p. 121.

\(^{111}\) Qays, p. 59.

\(^{112}\) ‘Urwah, p. 51.

\(^{113}\) Jamīl, p. 70. Similar concepts are available in Kuthayyir’s Diwān, pp. 85, 206.

\(^{114}\) Majnūn, p. 69.

\(^{115}\) Majnūn, p. 72.

\(^{116}\) Al-Sajda (32: 16).

\(^{117}\) Majnūn, p. 151.
7.3.4 Prematurely grey-haired

Becoming grey-haired is considered among the signs of the changing body; either because of age or because of grief. In the Qur’an the process of becoming old is linked to the change in colour of the hair to grey; ‘O my Lord! infirm indeed are my bones, and the hair of my head doth glisten with grey: but never am I unblest, O my Lord, in my prayer to Thee’\(^{118}\). However, this change in colour is also used to illustrate the horror of the last day; ‘Then how shall ye, if ye deny [Allah], guard yourselves against a Day that will make children hoary-headed?’\(^{119}\). In Arabic literary discourse white hair has gloomy associations; Abouseif argues:

In contrast to youth, it epitomized sexual abstinence, decrepitude, solitude, and despair. The poets lament over and over that white hair provokes the disgust of beautiful women. While some wrote ironical apologies of the aged man, many composed poems where the white-haired lover is being ridiculed by women\(^{120}\).

This is clearly evident in classical Arabic poetry where the poets often complained about the aloofness of women, towards them, when they lost their youth or the colour of their hair had changed. For example, in ‘Alqamah b. ‘Abdah’s “Mufāḍdaliyah”, he claims:

If you ask me about womankind,  
I am indeed  
Discerning in their ailments,  
eminently skilled:  
Should a man’s head hoary  
or his wealth decrease,  
He will find no share  
in their affections  
They seek abundant wealth  
wherever they know it’s found  
In youth’s first bloom alone

\(^{118}\) Maryam (19: 3).  
\(^{119}\) Al-Muzzammiil (73: 16).  
\(^{120}\) Abouseif, p. 58.
they take delight\textsuperscript{121}

‘Alqamah composes these verses in the framework of the *nasīb*, where he longs for an irretrievable past. Not only has his beloved gone, his own youth has also fled and other beloveds will spurn him in favor of the younger and wealthier\textsuperscript{122}. Thus, an Arabic poet would try to attract women by describing his youth and black hair instead of declaring that he is becoming old and that his hair has turned white. Al-Nuwayirī, for instance, presents several narratives and verses on the condemnation of ageing and the changing colour of hair\textsuperscript{123}.

However, in *al-ghazal al-‘udhri* we encounter a different image of the lover; the image of somebody who has been affected by great passion to the extent that he looks old and his hair is prematurely grey. The ‘udhri poet does not hesitate to use this gloomy image to convey that his body is changing because of his passionate love. Jamīl states that the fear of separation turns his hair grey\textsuperscript{124}.

Although the prevailing view in Arabic literature indicates that old age means the abandonment of love adventures\textsuperscript{125}, Majnūn confirms that his heart is increasingly enchanted by love, despite his old age. This indicates that the udhri poet’s love experience is not a temporary one or a passing phase, but an everlasting


\textsuperscript{122}Suzanne Stetkevych, p. 11. See her discussion of the metaphorical meaning of these verses, where she argues that the conceit of the lost mistress functions as a metaphorical pre-statement of the explicit statement of the poet’s political situation in the coming verses, p. 12.

\textsuperscript{123}Al-Nuwayiri, vol. 2, pp. 25-28.

\textsuperscript{124}Jamīl, p. 97.

\textsuperscript{125}Durayd b. al-Ṣummah, the pre-Islamic poet, says:

He recklessly plays around during his youth
But when grey hair overtops his head, he abandons vanity

experience as he attributes his old age to: ‘agonies that wear out my youth’. Jamīl also says:

I wasted my youth,  
and all my life waiting for her favours

Despite the negative reception of grey hair in Arabic culture, especially regarding its connection with love and affairs, we find Majnūn and Jamīl validate their prematurely grey hair as long as it is a consequence of love. They do not fear the mockery of the beloved or her aloofness since they sacrifice their youth for the sake of love. However after this, the lover’s body was presented in different forms in Arabic belles-lettres. One might recall the image of the lover in some Abbasid books which dealt with the theme of love. The lover is described as similar to a gentleman rather than being portrayed as the wasting away, pale and prematurely grey-haired lover, which is seen in the ‘udhrī tradition. For example, al-Washshā’ describes in detail what a zarīf, or gentleman, of the ninth century should be like. Some chapters in al-Muwashsha even deal with how the zarīf should talk, sit, eat and walk. The zarīf’s clothes should be refined and discreet, and only certain perfumes are regarded as appropriate. Nevertheless, in terms of the poetic form, the depiction of the lover as becoming prematurely grey-haired continues to be present in Arabic ghazal. In the Abbasid era, al-‘Abbās b. al-Aḥnaf, for instance, says:

O you who first knew me as a youth then I grew old  
when it was not my time to grow old

---

126 Majnūn, p. 235.  
128 For more details see al-Washsha’, pp. 178-184, 191-198.  
129 Al-Abbās b. al-Aḥnaf, p. 25.
7.3.5 Fainting

In ‘Urwah’s story, as illustrated in al-Aghani, there is a scene where the lover suffered from fainting and only the smell of ‘Afra’s veil can awake him:

When he departed from them his condition deteriorated, after having been healthy and on the way to recovery. He suffered from fainting fits and palpitations. Whenever he lost consciousness they would throw on his face a veil that had belonged to ‘Afrā’ and which she had given to him; then he would come to his senses.

Fainting represents the desire not to communicate with the outside world or even feel it. However, when the outside world is represented by the beloved, or anything that relates to her, the lover is revived as if fainting were a mini death and the smell of the beloved alone would enable one to gain life after death. The Quranic scene of the prophet Jacob who regains his sight after his son's shirt is thrown over his face is definitely not absent from the narrators' imagination when it comes to the stories of udhri lovers.

Thus, fainting is another example of the physical effects of love and it is particularly common in Majnūn’s story. There are several scenes in his romance where he faints, for example, after Laylā recited these verses to him:

Both of us appear in front of people
To hate each other
And yet each is entrenched with his friend
The secrets of the glancer are not hidden
If the eyes disclose what he conceals

Hearing this, he fell into a swoon and rose having lost his senses. The frequency of the scenes of fainting in Majnūn’s romance led Ṭaha Ḥusayn to approach Majnūn’s character somewhat sarcastically:

---

131 See Yusuf (12:96).
132 Fainting lovers is a well-established theme in the tales of The Arabian Nights. See, for instance, Manzalaoui’s discussion of the tale of ‘Ali b. Bakkar and Shams, in which the two lovers embraced each other and fell down fainting at the door. Mahmoud Manzalaoui, “Swooning Lovers: a Theme in Arab and European Romance”, pp. 74-76.
It was not enough that you would talk to him about Laylā, for him to faint and fall on his face (...) He spent all his life either falling on his face, or wandering at large. He never, or almost never, knew a calm, reasonable life; all his life was full of anxiety, divided between fainting and madness\(^\text{134}\).

However, Ḥusayn’s criticism is based on the irrational details of ‘\textit{udhrī}’ stories, he fails to see the literary side of these stories that continues to fascinate the audience and this failure could lead the reader to miss the symbolism it contains. In Majnūn’s romance, there is always ‘a connection between a fainting spell and the sight or mention of Laylā, and between the fainting spell and the poetry uttered immediately before or after these spells\(^{135}\). Majnūn’s poetry emphasises this point:

\begin{quote}
The wind from her has brought a cool breath, 
of her perfume upon my heart 
I swooned, for my patience was long gone 
and I had had neither answer nor reply\(^{136}\).
\end{quote}

In these verses, Majnūn is not only completely besotted by the presence or the vision of his beloved, he also faints merely as a result of the moving wind, which acts as a reminder of his beloved\(^\text{137}\). In one account, Majnūn faints out of rage and jealousy when he meets Laylā’s husband and asked him if he had ever touched Laylā. Her husband said: ‘By God, if you put me under oath, yes’. So, Majnūn grasped two handfuls of embers and held them until he fell unconscious and the embers and the flesh of his palms fell down\(^\text{138}\). Here, an extreme bodily reaction is attributed to the lover, where he burnt his hands and fainted. Amusingly, the reaction of fainting is not just associated to ‘\textit{udhrī}’ poets, their beloveds as well are associated with it at


\(^{135}\) Khairallah, p. 93.

\(^{136}\) Majnun, p. 67.

\(^{137}\) Khairallah points out that the motif of fainting is popular with the sufis, who pass from perplexity to fainting on the way to the vision of, and unity with, the beloved. The highest degree of this experience is expressed by the term şar’ (epileptic fit, or death). Khairallah, p. 94.

\(^{138}\) Cited in Khairallah, p. 87.
some points. Ibn Qutaybah narrates an anecdote about a man from the *Murrayah* tribe who went on business passing close to Najd, where he was taken care of by a woman. She asked him about Majnūn and he replied to her saying that Majnūn was wandering in the desert with the wild animals, possessing neither sense nor understanding except when Layla was mentioned to him; then he would weep and recite poetry for her. The man from *Murrayah* then said: ‘She wailed and wept until, by God, I thought that her heart would break’. Then she recited some verses and she cried until she fainted, and when she regained consciousness she told him that she was Layla.\(^{139}\)

In his comparative study, Manzalaoui shows that the phenomenon of the tearful and fainting lover is common of in Chaucer; the hero of *Troilus and Criseyde* is of this nature and Troilus’s faint does successfully win him Criseyde. Moreover, the fainting lover is not confined to Chaucer; swoons are attributed to the two manliest of all heroes Tristan and Lancelot.\(^{140}\) Manzalaoui declares that ‘the weeping and fainting lover represents, for the figure of the hero in medieval romance, the furthest development from resolute warrior and voyager-hero of epic’.\(^{141}\) In any case, among the striking similarities between Arabic tales of *The Arabian Nights* and Chaucer’s Troilus, as Manzalaoui points out, are; the similarity in tone and attitude, love at first sight, the topos of the bow and arrow of love that inflicts a wound upon the lover’s heart, the sense that love is a fated disaster and the double faint of the lovers.\(^{142}\)


\(^{141}\) Ibid., p. 73.

\(^{142}\) Ibid., pp. 76-82.
7.3.6 Madness

Among the synonyms of love in the Arabic language, about twenty of them relate love, in varying degrees, to insanity. This list contains words such as, *huyām, tabul, taym, Khabal, lamam*, and *mass*.\(^{143}\) Madness also has its various forms, and one of them is expressed as ‘*ishq*’\(^{144}\), as noted by the early philologist and lexicographer al-Āṣma’ī who travelled among the Bedouin Arabs. In this light, one can understand the great emphasis placed on madness in classical Arabic love stories\(^{145}\). This may explain why Ibn al-Jawzī and Ibn Qayyim suggested that the first line of defence against falling into *hawa* is to let oneself be guided by reason ‘*aql*, or by the rational soul. And so they stand in these respects in direct conflict with the main *adab* tradition\(^{146}\).

In comparison with Western literature, Manzalaoui notes that ‘madness is frequently the terminal fate in Arabic tales, while in the occidental ones it occurs (whether in a true or feigned form) as an episode in the life of a lover, rather than as his end’\(^{147}\). This idea is re-iterated in the following lines by Shakespeare:

> Lovers and madmen have such seething brains,
> Such shaping fantasies that apprehend
> More than cool reason ever comprehends\(^{148}\)

---

\(^{143}\) The last word *mass* has multiple meanings including madness, intercourse and passionate love. The link between the *jinn* and madness is also implicated in the word *mass*. For a detailed discussion of the words that link love with madness see Salamah, pp. 163-178. And for the motif of Majnun being touched by *jinn*, see Khairallah, p. 89.

\(^{144}\) Cited in Giffen, p. 64.

\(^{145}\) For example, in *The Thousand and One Nights* the tale of Qamar al-Zāmān and Budūr is a tale of mutual love-madness. Qamar suffers from madness and pines for his beloved, while Budūr is afflicted by violent madness and has to be physically restrained; finally the reunion of the two lovers was the ideal cure for both of them. See: *The Book of The Thousand and One Nights*, trans. Burton, Vol. 3 (New York: Heritage Press, 1962), pp. 1062-251.


\(^{147}\) Manzalaoui, p. 44.

\(^{148}\) *A Midsummer Night’s Dream* (Act V, scene I, 4-22).
In Majnūn’s romance, after Laylā marries another man, Majnūn completely loses his reason despite all attempts to cure him, and this is the basis of the legend and, of course, also explains the legendarily appellation attributed to him of Majnūn, the madman. Ibn Qutaybah, in one of the early Arabic accounts about Majnūn, states that: ‘He was nicknamed al-Majnūn (the madman), since his reason had left him because of the intensity of his passion’\(^149\). In this account, Ibn Qutaybah offers a detailed description of Majnūn’s madness:

[Laylā] would shun him and converse with others, to the point where he was hurt. When she realized that, she turned to him and said:

In front of other people, we both display hatred,
While each of us is entrenched in the other’s heart
Things worsened for him so much that his reason left him, and he wandered aimlessly with the wild beasts. He would not put on any garment without tearing it to pieces, nor he would understand anything unless Laylā was mentioned to him. Once she was mentioned, he would recover his reason and talk about her without dropping a letter\(^150\).

Dols observes that ‘the freedom of the harmless madman and familial care are conspicuous features in the early Arabic accounts’\(^151\). However, al-Aghānī’s version of this particular account includes some additional details. For example, when Majnūn failed to perform the ritual prayer and his father asked him for an explanation, he would not respond with [even] a word. His father, the narrator, continues: ‘we used to confine and chain him, and then he [resorted to] biting his tongue and lips until fearing for him, we let him go his way. And so, he madly wanders’\(^152\). Listening to Laylā’s verses led Majnūn to wander in the desert. Khan notes that, in this account, Majnūn is portrayed as being unerringly voluble in

\(^{151}\) Dols, p. 313.
language that is highly erring (poetry) and his fluency in poetic speech is compared
to his muteness when asked to utter prayers.\(^{153}\)

In any case, Majnūn’s madness, as expressed in several accounts, appears to be a ‘break with the commonly accepted norms of behaviour, whether on a personal or on a social level’\(^{154}\). He wandered in the desert and made friends with beasts, speaking to no one and completely neglecting his physical appearance\(^{155}\). So, ‘however Majnūn’s madness is interpreted, it cannot completely conceal the discernible stigma that has commonly been attached to insanity in Arab society’\(^{156}\).

The narrators of Majnūn’s story bring to our attention his physical appearance in particular, though they also provide some stereotyped elements of mad behaviour in general. His physical condition ‘becomes his distinguishing mark as an incarnation of the love-mad poet, and in contrast to other heroes of the same type of romance’\(^{157}\).

One might recall, for instance, the images used to describe Jamīl; the narratives portray him as a handsome, noble, knight, who wears fine clothes and acts appropriately\(^{158}\). However Jamīl says:

\[
\text{When I said: give me back my reason (caught by you)} \\
\text{I want to live like other people (without passion)} \\
\text{She said: you are asking an impossible thing}\]

Majnūn, on the other hand, is portrayed as having become childlike and as the archetypal madman. Although Dols claims that ‘Majnūn’s withdrawal was an
expression of his rejection of society and his own humanity, it could also be argued that pity was aroused by his act. For example, after tying him up, his family freed him fearing that he would hurt himself when biting his lips and tearing his garments; furthermore, all those who visited him in the desert seemed to show him compassion. Nevertheless, Majnūn’s madness appears to be in conflict with the society, as Khairallah points out:

Majnūn seems to be the farthest expression of the glamorized rebellion against social, religious, and intellectual conventions. These alienating conventions seem to have generated a counter-alienation, on outcry for total freedom, and a desire to return to unity with nature, where life is imagined to be beyond good and evil (...). Totally naked, Majnūn lets his hair grow all over his body. He grazes with animals and run with them, mainly with gazelles, who resemble his God: Laylā. This behaviour marks his irremediable madness. Thus, several anecdotes identify his appearance with that of the jinn themselves. The insistence on this characteristic of Majnūn’s appearance, could be interpreted both as an expression of the popular imagination behind the legend, and as a crystallization of Majnūn’s identification with the irrational forces of nature.

Majnūn's unkempt physical appearance: his long nails, his long and unkempt hair, his nudity and the growth of his body hair, all portray an image that is unacceptable for Muslim men. Many critics such as, Andre Miquel, Khairallah, Michael Dols and Ruqayya Khan noted the anti-Islamic tendencies of Majnūn’s characterisation as a wild man. Dols declares that ‘the savage would appear as the negator of Muslim social values’. While Khan demonstrates that ‘Majnūn is both negated against and the negator: he is both the sinful wild man and the romanticized, rebellious wild man’. She sees his bestiality and nudity as bodily signs of a moral decay caused by

---

160 Dols, p. 333.
161 Khairallah, p. 85.
162 Dols, p. 335.
163 Khan, p. 93.
his disregard for familial and religious conventions. Both Khan and Khairallah point out the romanticized picture of the poet who returns to natural perfection, living outside of society’s boundaries, and instead lives in harmony with the animals who have become accustomed to him. The use of the image of the ‘Bedouin wild man as a means of rebellion against established society itself’ is, Khan argues, tragic:

Majnūn represents the image of the wild man—the madman in the desert, without a name, a genealogy, a home or a history—employed as an icon of rebellion against the ‘civilizing mission of Islam’. His geographical errancy or mad wanderings in search of the Najd are sentimentalized as a nostalgic gravitation toward the pristine Bedouin homeland.

However, the emphasis Khan puts on Majnūn being Bedouin, thus the representation of Bedouin rebellion against civilizing mission of Islam, is a questionable one. On one hand, mad lovers can be found in Arabic literature as living in big cities such as Baghdad as well as in the Bedouin desert. On the other hand, the Bedouin were an integral part of Muslim society so the conflicts they might have had with one aspect or another of Islam are not unique to them just because they were Bedouin. I would rather see Majnūn’s depiction as an individual whose behaviour contrasts with both Islamic and Bedouin norms, establishing his own conduct as an outcast of society.

In his poetry, Majnūn tries to deny his madness, linking his ability to compose poetry to his obsession with Laylā:

---

164 Ibid., pp. 99-100.  
165 Khairallah, p. 87. Khan, p.93. However, Khan emphasises the symbol of gazelles in Majnūn’s wilderness, but she neglected the other animals, which are not peace-loving animals, like (waḥsh) beasts, which are associated with Majnūn as well as gazelles in the narratives.  
166 Khan, p. 99.  
167 There are several examples of mad lovers in cities. See, for instance, the story told by al-Sarraj about a mad lover from al-Baṣrah, who ultimately killed himself. Ja’far b. Ṣaḥḥāb al-Sarraj, Masār al-ʿusḥshāq (Beirut : Dar šādir, 1958), vol. 1, pp. 19-20.  
168 In spite of Khan’s emphasis on Majnūn’s tribe, the Bedouin tribe of Banū ʿĀmir, as an anti-type the Prophet, other sources suggest a contrasting idea about the tribe and their embrace of Islam. See, for example, ‘Abdullah b. Muḥammad b. Abī Shaybah, Kitāb al-muṣannaf (Beirut: Dar al-ﬁkr, 1994), vol. 7, p. 560.
They speak of a madman crazed with her memory
By God, I have no madness, nor am I bewitched
If I try to compose poetry not in her remembrance
I swear by your fathers, my verse will not obey

It is worth noticing that while condemning Majnūn for being a madman out of his love, the “wise” men also chase after him in order to hear to his poetry. If he is bewitched by magic, Laylā is his magic, and for her sake he composes his poetry that those “wise” men are longing to hear. In short, Majnūn’s mad outpourings are received, to some extent, as a source of knowledge. Majnūn’s story in the hands of Nawfal b. Musaḥiq, moreover, demonstrates the link between wildness and poetry. Nawfal saw Majnūn naked, playing with earth. He was told that if he wanted Majnūn to talk sensibly, he should mention Laylā to him, and when Nawfal did so, Majnūn gave him his attention, and talked to him about Laylā, reciting his poetry about her. This text reveals the collation between Majnūn’s recital of poetry and his becoming wild. When Majnūn becomes wild, he takes on the characteristics of the deer, whereas when he recites poetry, he is brought back to human balance, which makes the deer shun him.

7.3.7 Death

Maṣārī‘ al-‘ushshaq by al-Sarrāj (d. 500/1106) greatly popularised the theme that the consequences of passionate love were tragic. The word Maṣārī‘ comes from the root that has a connection with “throwing down to the ground”. From this the
meanings “to fall down in an epileptic fit”, “to go mad” or “to be killed in battle” are derived. The word is appropriate in the title of this book, for it embraces almost all the afflictions described in its pages: fainting, madness and death. 

Masāʾir al-‘ushshaq is just one example, and in fact, most love stories in classical Arabic literature place an atypical poignancy on the tragedy associated with love, but needless to say, this manner is typical of the ‘udhri tradition. In Arabic treatises, which deal with the theme of love, one can find endless examples of the tragic end of a lover including insanity, wasting away, sudden death or the double death of the pair as in this tale:

Ibn al-Ashdaq says: I was making my ritual circumambulation of the Kaʿba at Mecca, when I remarked a young man standing under the eaves-trough, his head held down beneath his robe, moaning like a man in fever. I greeted him: he returned my salutation and then said, ‘From where do you come?’ ‘From Basra’ I replied. ‘Are you returning there?’ he asked. ‘Yes’, I said. ‘When you reach al-Nibaj, go forth to the villagers and cry out, “Hilal, o Hilal!” A young girl will come forth to you. Recite this verse to her: I craved for a doom hurled out of your eyes That you might see in me a man killed by love’. He died on the spot. When I reached al-Nibaj, I went forth to the villagers and called out, ‘Hilal, o Hilal!’ A girl came forth to me, more beautiful than I had ever seen. ‘What have you to say?’ she asked. ‘A young man at Mecca recited this verse to me…’ ‘What did he do next?’ she asked. ‘He died’. She fell down dead upon the spot.

In this tale, death is almost a choice as the poet identifies the moment of his death in accordance with the intensity of both his love and his poetry. It is implied that the

---

173 See Giffen, p. 108. Interestingly, the tragic effects of love have been used by Muslim authors who have a strong interest in morality, to condemn [love]. In their discourse, the passionate lover is always tragically driven to fornication, incest, murder, suicide or madness. See, for instance, ‘Abd al-Rahman b. al-Jawzi, Dhamm al-hawa, [In Blame of Love] (Beirut: Dār al-kutub al-‘ilmiyyah, 1987). However, a book like Masāʾir al-‘ushshaq is written with sympathy for the sorrows of love. 

174 See, for instance, al-Washsha, pp. 94-98, al-Nuwayri, vol. 2, pp. 160, 184, Ibn Qutaybah, ‘Uyun al-Akhbar, vol. 4, pp. 128-134, in which one can find many stories of the tragic ends of lovers. Ibn Ḥazm, in his Tawq, devoted a chapter entitled ‘Of Death’ to the martyrs of love. ‘Sometimes,’ he says, ‘the affair becomes so aggravated, the lover’s nature is so sensitive, and his anxiety is so extreme, that the combined circumstances result in his departure out of this transient world’, p. 220. 

heart of the narrator ṭawī is moved by the plight of the frustrated lovers, who ultimately die because of their ardent passion. He acts as the go-between, making sure to deliver the lover’s message to his beloved, and then to relate the story in the most sympathetic tone. However, much of the contents of Maṣāriʿ al-ʿushshāq appear in numerous later works, which use ʿudhri love stories as examples of how love affects its victims, often killing them in one way or another. One of those works; Kitāb al-waḍīḥ al-mubīn fi ḏhikr man īstushhida min al-muhḥīn, is devoted entirely to the martyrs of love. It provides a clear link between the lovers, who died because of their passionate love, and the concept of martyrdom, explicitly labelling all victims of love as martyrs. In fact, the author of Kitāb al-waḍīḥ, Mughultāy (d.762/1361 ), is relying upon a well-established tradition, which is ascribed to the Prophet himself: ‘He who loves, yet remains chaste, conceals his secret and dies, dies a martyr’. The first mention of this ḥadīth about the martyrs of love, as Giffen notes, is in the Kitāb al-zahrā of Ibn Dāʿūd, although it became more widely known later. Even though the genuineness or spuriousness of its origin is questionable, this idea enjoyed a measure of success. Several variant versions of this tradition are quoted sympathetically in some of the Arabic love treatises. Two centuries after Ibn Dāʿūd, Ibn al-Jawzī included ten versions of the ḥadīth in his book Dhamm al-hawa. If the great jihad is the battle against one’s hawa, then it is understood

---

177 Giffen, p. 99.
179 Giffen, p. 100. Though nowhere does Ibn al-Jawzī give any indication of his own attitude toward the tradition of the martyrs.
180 It appears in a Al-Bayḥaqī’s Sunan as a statement ascribed to the Prophet, see the discussion about its authenticity in www.islamonline.net/servlet/satellite?cid=1122528606158&pagename=islamonline-arabic-Ask_Scholar/FatwaA/FatwaAAskTheScholar, 10 October 2009.
that ‘one who falls violently in love, restrains his passions, remains upright and chaste, and consequently dies of love, would seem to be one who had battled against the lusts of the flesh’. Thus, this hadith, Manzalaoui maintains: ‘denotes a desire to lend religious cachet to the interest in sentimental and passionate love. It arises from a genuine recognition within Islam of the moral psychomachia as the truest of holy wars: applied to the temptation of a sexual situation’. However, in his verses, Jamīl adds a different meaning to the concept of a martyr:

| They say: “Take part in the Holy War, Jamīl.   |
| Go on the raid.”                                 |
| But what jihad do I want                         |
| Besides the one that has to do with women?      |
| Conversation in their company                    |
| Brings joy;                                      |
| But each man who dies in their midst            |
| Is a martyr.                                    |

Hence, the martyr, according to Jamīl, is not the one who dies in a holy war, nor is he the one who has concealed his love and avoided his beloved. On the contrary, he is the one who is to die among the women whose conversation he enjoys, and ultimately whose beauty kills him. Thus, ‘Jamīl bids for martyrdom by asserting that since he suffers on a battleground where he too is slain—albeit slain by his love for women—he also qualifies as a martyr-hero(...) The poet-lover claims that he suffers and dies while defending himself against the fatal attraction of women’. Consequently, the concept of death or the ‘mortality of the body’ is closely related to ‘ultimate love’. ‘Udhri’ love and suffering are inseparable, and the suffering

181 Ibid., p103. See her full discussion on the concept of the martyr in Islam and its connection with this tradition, the association between the ideal of chaste conduct and martyrdom in Islam, on pp. 100-105.


184 Khan, p. 116.
eventually leads to death. The poet usually resorts to this concept when he feels incapable of possessing his beloved. Qays declares:

\[
\text{O love for Lubnā,}
\text{you have tortured me so let me either die or live}
\text{Death is easier than a life of separation and distance}^{185}
\]

Hence, death is preferable to a life of separation. Death is seen as a desirable objective or simply as a relief for the ardent lover. The concept of the death-wish is evident in *al ghazal al-'udhrī*, death is seen as the calm end to suffering. Jamīl wishes:

\[
\text{O if only I could meet my death suddenly,}
\text{if it is not ordained that we meet}^{186}
\]

On the other hand, the death-wish has another element besides the calm end to suffering. It is the way to seek the closeness of the beloved after death, if this is not possible in life. For example, ‘Urwah looks forward to being with ‘Afra’ even though it could not happen in this life:

\[
\text{I love the day of Judgment since I have been told}
\text{That I shall meet her there}^{187}
\]

The explanation here is simply that love for the ‘udhrī poets is immortal. Love, as they illustrate, has no end, it is the ultimate truth of their being. Qays demonstrates the immortality of his love:

\[
\text{Our love will survive every event,}
\text{And will visit us in the darkness of the grave}^{188}
\]

So, the wish for the lovers to be buried in nearby graves if not in the same grave, appears in ‘udhrī poetry:

\[
\text{God I seek your refuge}
\text{not to part between Buthaynah and me}
\]

\[185\] Qays, p. 34. And see Kuthayyir, p. 20.
\[186\] Jamīl, p. 39.
neither in my lifetime nor after my death. And let her be my neighbour if I die, how nice my death would be if she was near to my grave. Majnūn also declares:

O if only we could live together and if we die my bones lie beside her bones. ‘Urwah, likewise, says:

I long for the day of resurrection since it is said that ‘Afra’ and I will meet there. In ‘Urwah’s story, after leaving his beloved and her husband, ‘Urwah went on his way, expressing his passion by reciting poetry. He continued doing so until his death, which came three days before he would have joined his tribe, indicating that death for him was, to some extent, a choice. When ‘Afrā’ heard the news of his death she was greatly distressed and lamented him in verses until she died, only a few days after him. In another account, the narrator al-Nu‘mān relates his meeting with the wasting away ‘Urwah and his mother. In this account ‘Urwah seems to be waiting for his death and can sense as it comes closer. When al-Nu‘mān asked this mother about her son, she replied: ‘By God, a whole year long I haven’t heard him utter a word or a groan until today. Then he came to me and said, If ever my mothers have been crying, well, today I think I shall be taken away. They will want to let me hear them but I shall not hear it when I lie exposed on the necks of the people.’ And so [said al- Nu‘mān], ‘before I left the tribe I had washed his corpse, wrapped him in a shroud, performed the ritual prayer for him, and buried him’. From this anecdote, one can elicit how the death resulting from love is a choice, as the poet

189 Jamīl, p.36. See also for similar wishes: Jamīl, p. 22, Majnūn, pp. 24, 123, ‘Urwah, p. 44.
190 Majnun, p. 191.
191 ‘Urwah, p. 41.
193 Ibid. See also Ibn Qutaybah’s similar versions of the ‘Urwah’s death story. Ibn Qutaybah, pp. 625-626.
shows his willingness to die by reciting poems that trigger passion. Seeking consolation in these poems is like attempting to treat one illness with another. Reciting these poems prior to death is like a license that entitles the poet to join the company of love victims. When Ibn ‘Abbās heard ‘Urwah’s story he said: ‘this one is killed by love: no blood money is due, nor retaliation’¹⁹⁴.

It is no wonder, then, that ‘Urwah’s story became an archetype of the lover who died from his passion. He became, as some lover-poets before him, a model that other ‘udhri poets followed. Death for the sake of love was not new, it was the path that the true lovers of the past had taken, Jamīl says:

Before me Hind’s lover and his friend Marqqash died and ‘Urwah was cured of his heartache
Each of them died of love and my passion for her is greater.
I think, nay, I know that she will send me the way they went¹⁹⁵

Any love, Majnūn declares, is worthless if it does not kill the lover, as it did with the old lovers¹⁹⁶. Furthermore, Majnūn, Qays and Jamīl themselves became models for the martyrs of love and as such, subsequent poets referred to them as the true representations. Al-‘Abbās b. Al-Aḥnaf, for instance, says:

Jamīl did not love like myself
Verily, neither did ‘Urwah, the martyr of love¹⁹⁷

The image of the beloved as a killer is a striking one in al-ghazal al-‘udhri. She is depicted as the one who is responsible for the poet’s death, as he dies for her love;

Jamīl says:

¹⁹⁵ Jamīl, p. 32. See also Majnūn, p. 197, and Qays, p. 43.
¹⁹⁶ Majnūn, p. 124. Many poets apologised for being alive while they were in love, See al-Sarrāj’s discussion on majlis al-Mubarrad in Masāri‘ al-‘ushshq, vol. 2, p. 260. In fact, no poet could claim to be the first to die of love, as each one has become part of the poet-lover circle where all poet-lovers, even the pre-Islamic ones, such as al-Muraqqash and Ibn ‘Ajlan al-Nahdi, face the same destiny. See Salamah, p. 405.
My bosom friend, in your whole life,  
Have you ever seen a slain man  
Weep for love of his slayer as I do?  

She is described as being capable of controlling both the poet’s life and his death, however no ransom is demanded from her and she will not be punished for her “crime”. Even though the beloved is shown as capable of bringing agony and death, she is depicted as a source of life at the same time; and even if the poet was already dead, she could bring him to life again; Jamīl says:

Were a herald from you to announce my funeral  
and I was on the arms of men I would come alive again

Majnūn also demonstrates:

Had she been with me when dying,  
her words would have stopped my death throes

In one account, Majnūn’s relatives fear that he might throw himself down from the mountain. Even though committing suicide did not constitute an honourable death or a sign of courage among Arabs either before or after Islam and in fact the idea is forbidden in the latter; ‘udhri poets transformed suicide into a positive act:

Qays wanted to throw himself from the pinnacle of the mountain  
It is no surprise that love can kill a man – it turns him as it wills from side to side

This positive view of suicide contrasts with Jacobi’s claim that ‘Death proves and shows the intensity of love, and may be wished for, but there is no mention of self-

---

198 Jamīl, p. 73.  
199 Kuthayyir, p. 110.  
200 Ibid., pp. 84, 87.  
201 Jamīl, p. 20.  
202 Majnūn, p. 191.  
204 Al-Jahiz maintains that any Arab who killed himself was blameworthy. Al-Jahiz, al-Ḥayawān, ed. ‘Abd al-Salam Harun (Beirut, al-Mujama’ al-‘ilmi al-Islami, 1969), vol. 2, p. 279.  
205 Majnūn, p. 48.
sacrifice and suicide. In a verse by Abū Mishar al-‘udhri, who followed the ‘udhri path, he clearly states that an ‘udhri lover should not die in his bed.

Furthermore, in the classical Arabic tales influenced by the ‘udhri tradition, suicide was sometimes considered to be the real proof of love. An example which confirms this supposition is a story cited in many sources, including tazyīn al-Aswaṣ and Tawq al-Ḥamamah. It is about an Andalusian man who sold his beloved slave when facing financial difficulties. When she reached the home of her new master, who was a Berber, her former owner almost expired, so he offered the man who had bought her all his possessions if he would restore her to him, but the Berber refused. The former owner appealed to the king. The king, most touched by his plight, commanded the Berber man to be summoned to court and asked him to free the girl. But the buyer refused, saying that he was even more deeply in love with her than the Andalusian man, so the king could do nothing about it. The Andalusian, in despair, threw himself down from the top of a building to the ground, but he did not suffer any great injuries. When the king asked him why he had done that, he replied that he could live no longer after losing his beloved. Thus, the king decided that the solution was to ask the Berber man to prove that his love was true by casting himself down from the roof of the pavilion, as the Andalusian had done already. But the Berber man was unable to throw himself and so he allowed the “true” lover to have the girl. The king’s phrase is attributed to an inherited cultural and spiritual tradition that provides a link between love and death. It views death as a continuation of love.

---

207 Al-Sarraj, vol. 1, p. 94.
for and by the beloved. Even though love is perceived as a disorder that affects the balance of the mind, the deprivation of it does not mean the return of equilibrium\textsuperscript{209}.

The highly influential myth of deadly ‘\textit{udhri}’ love, therefore, has formed had a long tradition of fascination and transfiguration\textsuperscript{210}. The subsequent poets continue to link their love with death, al-\textquoteleft Abbās b. Al-Ahnaf, for instance, says:

\begin{quote}
Oh Zalūm! It is time for me to go to my grave
I have wasted away before my death in my own clothes
You have made me taste the bitter morsel of death by love
Can you not by your life have mercy on my youth\textsuperscript{211}
\end{quote}

As previously mentioned, the Arabic treatises on love are full of such stories and of discussions such as whether the dead lover is to be considered a martyr and whether his death is lawful. Furthermore, why does a lover face such a tragic end? One attempt to answer the last question, parodies such lovers by describing their malady as a medical case. Ibn Da‘ūd explains:

\begin{quote}
The first attack of despair is the worst, because the heart is not yet used to it and is not prepared to resist it. He who survives this first attack will manage to bear the other attacks as well. The reason why the first attack can in other cases be lethal is that the heart becomes hot, since it affected by such horrible things. In such cases, the function of the rest of the body is to supply the heart with an equal amount of cold. But when the heat is too much the septum cordis get torn, which causes death\textsuperscript{212}.
\end{quote}

Raven states that Ibn Da‘ūd’s view is certainly inspired by Greek science\textsuperscript{213}.

However, we have already provided a discussion on love-sickness in the Arab discourse in the first section of this chapter.

\textsuperscript{209} ‘Abdallah, p. 119.
\textsuperscript{211} Al-‘Abbās b. Al-Ahnaf, p. 35.
\textsuperscript{213} Ibid.
7.4 Conclusion

The changes that occur in the lover’s body as he descends into love sickness become signs of moral values related to the manners of love and to the literary values of criticism. Thus, some of the changes are seen in the emanations of love and consequently become qualities that are much sought after, as they distinguish between true lovers and those who only claim to be so. Al-Washšāʾ states that:

Signs of love that primarily denote the lover include emaciation, constant illness, shortage of sleep, pale face, addiction to isolation, continuing tears, meditating status, moans, nostalgia and consecutive sighs. No matter how the lover tries to conceal and endure his love sooner or later it will be revealed.214

To enhance his point, al-Washšāʾ quoted a poet who said:

No-one but those who have loved know sorrow,
and not all those who say ’I love’ speak the truth
The true lovers are known by their gauntness
from their long pact with sorrows and sleeplessness.215

The ghazal poetry of the Abbasid poet, al-ʿAbbās b. Al-Aḥnaf is full of similar themes, such as, the tearful, wasting away and sleepless lover. He, for instance, says:

Separation has not healed the wound of the heart
and my head has become white before its time
The burning heat of separation from my love has wasted away my body
and my heart, from the fires of its love,
has a terrible sickness for which there is no physician.216

On the basis of the discussions in this chapter, one could claim that the values attached to excessive love contradict all moral, social and religious values which are firmly based on moderation. I have discussed the tragic outcomes of the lovers in examining the phenomena of fainting, madness and death as they appear in al-ghazal al-ʿudhri. The extreme reactions of the lover’s body reflect his excessive passion;

---

214 Al-Washšāʾ, p. 76.
215 Ibid., pp. 76-77.
which, on the one hand, proves to be his true emotion, and on the other hand, gains him a place in literary collections and anthologies on love in classical Arabic literature. These extreme bodily responses to love opened the door to a wide discussion on \((\text{ahwāl al-'āshiq})\) the lover’s circumstances and what caused them and to what extent he accepted responsibility for his acts. This discussion involved medical, religious, philosophical and literary perspectives, though the theory of love among Arabs was not formulated by philosophers or physicians, it was rather formulated by religious men \(\text{fuqaha'}\) and literary men \(\text{'udaba'}\). Hence, the use of the poetry of love as a resource for the writing on the theory of love became a well established tradition in Arabic literature. In fact, most of the writing on this subject was done by literary men in some sense, who were therefore well-versed in Arabic poetry, both old and new, and so were positively disposed toward it\(^{217}\). As discussed in this chapter, several of the effects of love on the \('\text{udhrī}\) lover’s own body are depicted in \(\text{al-ghazal al-'udhrī}\), for example, crying, wasting away, insomnia, becoming prematurely grey, fainting, madness and death. We have observed the depiction of details such as these in both \('\text{udhrī}\) poetry and in narratives. We have also examined the link between these themes and similar ones in classical Arabic poetry. The \('\text{udhrī}\) poets afterwards became the models of the true lovers who suffered tremendously, so much so that the signs of their suffering became evident in their bodies.

Interestingly, the image of the beloved as depicted in \('\text{udhrī}\) poetry is a complete contrast to that of her lover. She is depicted as the most beautiful one and as the

possessor of eternal youth, while the man who is obsessed with his passionate love is presented as a sick and thin old man, swooning and mad.
Conclusion

The primary objective of this thesis has been to trace how the body is represented in the seventh-eighth centuries CE literary tradition of ‘udhrī love. To a great extent, this goal has been achieved by analysing poetry and narratives ascribed to ‘udhrī poets which have appeared in several literary collections of classical Arabic literature. In particular, the study relies on Kitāb al-Aghānī (The Book of Songs), the monumental tenth century collection of biographies of Arab poets and their poetry. It also relies on the collections of poetry (diwāns) of ‘udhrī poets, which have been edited by several scholars. The thesis focuses on the difference between what poetry says, and what later sources such as Kitāb al-Aghānī say about the ‘udhrī poets and poetry by discussing the development of the tradition and its overlapping historical layers. This thesis discusses and reappraises a number of scholarly approaches to the subject and attempts to chart a new approach through a new reading of the primary sources.

The methodology used in this study is, at its centre, a close literary analysis of classical literary texts. Despite certain pitfalls, this method can effectively demonstrate how the body is represented in the ‘udhrī tradition. In addition, this approach allows the researcher to consider different interpretations of a text. As a result, this thesis demonstrates that the body lies at the heart of the ‘udhrī tradition. The lack of possession and absence of physicality only serve to heighten the desire since these features merely draw more attention to that which is being denied. This shows the privileged position of the body through the prominent duality of its presence and absence. The very concept of chasteness involves a conscious denial of
physical contact, and this consciousness often implies a strong awareness of physicality.

This thesis explains how the past is reconstructed in the ‘udhrī tradition by discussing the way in which stories and narratives about poets and events over the course of the ninth and tenth centuries gave rise to certain narrative compositions that in effect invented a tradition. The study sheds light on the possible explanations of what spark off a fresh interest in ‘udhrī love in the ninth and tenth centuries, providing a discussion of the period of documentation, criticism and authorship. It also examines the influence of Sufism and the Persian interest in al-ghazal al-‘udhrī as it is well known that the Persians had shown particular interest in the story of Majnūn Laylā. Moreover, love is used as a narrative trope to address moral and ethical issues, so the study raises questions about the possibility that the spread of libertinism in the Abbasid era helped to create a desire to return to al-ghazal al-‘udhrī, which is considered to be the utter opposite of libertinism.

This study provides a discussion of texuality verses reality. It has asserted that the classical Arabic text simultaneously provides contradictory anecdotes, as if trying to leave open the possible interpretations one may derive from the work. There are fascinating contradictions found within the ‘udhrī tradition regarding physical contact between the lovers; if certain narrators have related stories about ‘udhrī lovers making a particular claim about them, others relate different stories that give the opposite impression. The role played by ruwāḥ or popular story-tellers is important to note, for they paid special attention to love stories and recited them to different audiences that naturally would have held a variety of notions about chastity and love. This likely often resulted in the promotion of two or more contradicting
interpretations of one single story or body of poems. However, the contradiction in ‘udhrī poetry regarding physicality may also possibly be resolved in light of the many different contexts within which the poet composed his verses. He might have composed them in different phases of his relationship with his beloved, which might have taken on various forms. Besides, human emotions within love are quite complex and cannot be simply classified into the categories of virtuous and sensuous, and these themselves may not necessarily be opposing concepts. This fact gives many traditions of love poetry a conflicting nature, as the poet’s emotions fluctuate between representing the unattainable glorified image of his beloved, and expressing his own instinctive desire to unite with her.

In poetry, the desire to obtain the object of love is expressed constantly in the ‘udhrī tradition. Certain repetitions of terminology strike the reader of ‘udhrī poetry: thirstiness, touching, saliva, beds, longing, kissing, embrace, appointments, and so on. It is irrelevant whether this desire was in fact satisfied or not; that is a matter for students of the historical context, which is not our concern here. Rather, we are interested in the literary imagination. In any case, marital union is never a feature of ‘udhrī narratives, which provides a direct contrast with the Islamic discourse around marriage. The ‘udhrī tradition challenges the ideal of marital bonds between ‘udhrī lovers. Furthermore, while Islamic discourse emphasises the goal of reproduction as a result of sexual enjoyment, the ‘udhrī tradition provides no trace of children. The only possible offspring for the ‘udhrī lover is poetry. It is a linguistic product, not biological. Therefore, language is the only result of ‘udhrī love. In fact, it is part of idealising the beloved to keep her unique and inimitable.
The idealisation, distance and solitude of the beloved enable her to play her decisive role for the poet, that of inspiration. The entire ‘udhrī experience unconsciously distances the beloved in order to heighten the poetry’s emotional energy. The narrators are preoccupied by the concept of sensuality, and its connection with love, and enhance it by frequently dwelling upon its absence. Also, the so-called lack of consummation between the ‘udhrī lover and his beloved itself inflames his passion continuously. This passionate love inspires beautiful poetry within the ‘udhrī poet-lover. In addition, the poets or the narrators are clearly aware that the unattainability of the beloved is in fact an essential framework for composing poetry. In the ‘udhrī romances, the lover loses everything, including his beloved, but retains his ability to compose poetry. Therefore, for an ‘udhrī poet, being a poet appears to be his preferred, ultimate and chosen goal over the possession of his beloved.

This study has endeavoured to show that the representation of the beloved in al-ghazal al-‘udhrī has been influenced by the pre-Islamic poetry, which offers to ‘udhrī poets an authoritative image of the beautiful woman. This image suggests, for example, that whiteness of the skin, softness of the body, slenderness of the waist, and a general resemblance to the gazelle and the sun are all stock indexes of feminine beauty. So, the pre-Islamic tradition provides the stereotype of female beauty, and establishes a poetic figurative language for describing the beloved. However, the ‘udhrī poet's reliance upon this established repertoire raises questions about the authenticity of the poet’s experience as well as the development of his audience’s expectations.
Al-ghazal al-ʿudhri provides detailed descriptions of the beloved’s desirable body. It also depicts an image of the beloved as being synonymous with the softer components of the world, such as water and light. This thesis suggests a link between the image of the beloved as gazelle, sun or rain, and ancient Arab mythology. It also suggests a link between this mythology and the preferable image of a desirable woman as a corpulent one. The comparison of the beloved with a gazelle is one of the major topoi of classical Arabic love poetry. Thus, in this study I have explored the metaphoric image of the beloved as gazelle along with its mythic associations. The gazelle was considered sacred, and Arabs would allow these animals to go free instead of killing them. In addition, the emphasis on the image of a deer with its fawn could be understood as a representation of the woman who has become sacred through motherhood. This process has its roots in ancient Arab religious belief, which used to worship the goddess-mother. The ancient Arabs portrayed her as a mother-deer and a mother-oryx. The resemblance between the sun and woman in classical Arabic poetry also has its roots in ancient Arab mythology. The sun was one of the gods that used to be worshipped by the ancient Arabs. They ascribed characteristics of motherhood to the sun, conceiving it as the Mother god, which is why the sun is referred to as being female. Moreover, the description of the beloved’s saliva as rain drops and wine suggests a link between her and sacred objects, since wine also carries certain religious meanings.

The image of the corpulent woman, which is a dominant image for a desirable woman in al-ghazal al-ʿudhri, is also inherited from ancient religious belief. The Goddess-mother was one of the deities that were worshipped by the ancient Arabs. Her corpulent body symbolises fertility and motherhood. Motherhood
is a principle function of the Goddess-mother, who gives life and enriches the tribe of warriors and preserves the human race. It is essential that a god is depicted with all the characteristics for which he is being worshipped. However, the later poet may have preserved the image of the female corpulent body, but removed the ancient pagan religious associations from it. Therefore, this image became a model of desirable female beauty, whilst moving away from its possible ancient roots.

The ‘udhri poet was expected to work within the framework of the established literary tradition. Alternatively, the genre is governed by the poet-lover’s obsession with idealising every aspect of his beloved into tropes relating to beauty. Therefore, it may be argued that the ‘udhri imitation of the older norms does not mean that the poet does not see his beloved with his own eyes. Rather, it suggests that he sees and describes his beloved in terms affected [or shaped?] by his cultural and aesthetic inheritance. She becomes, through his loving eyes, the very archetype of ideal beauty. No one can replace her, even the literary beauty model. She becomes the model. She becomes the archetype, illuminated and illustrated with all the necessary and desirable colours, and contours of beauty.

A comparative approach shows that other appropriations of ‘udhri love stories replicate this reliance upon stock features of beauty. For example, this study has provided a comparison between Laylā’s portrayal in Majnūn’s poetry and her portrayal in later Persian miniature paintings, which are based on Majnūn’s legend. As has been shown, her depiction in Arabic poetry varies greatly from her depiction within Persian paintings. Nonetheless, although it is almost a contrasting image, Laylā’s portrayal is always enacted through a stereotype, in both Arabic poetry and Persian paintings.
Although sensual feeling runs through many images in ‘udhri poetry and influences its descriptive language, especially while imitating the older norms and patterns, it however, also often sublimates beauty to worlds that transcend human ones. In many cases, in ‘udhri poetry the beloved’s beauty surpasses human beauty, and is marked by supernatural attributes. The beloved’s beauty is beyond nature, and is associated with many extraordinary effects, as the poet’s admiration for beauty resembles religious belief. This beauty goes beyond time itself. It is timeless beauty, and eternally youthful. When the beloved’s body surmounts time this implies its perfection and immortality. It is an immortal body that achieves the status of worshipped statues and images. Therefore, this thesis has highlighted themes such as the beloved’s eternal youth, her omnipotence and the devotion for her that goes beyond reason.

The bodily presence in al-ghazal al-‘udhri does not always take the form of a physical body. Sometimes it emerges through symbolic channels, where symbolising the body appears alongside its physical depiction, and this is closely linked with the ideas of the present and absent bodies of the beloved. Symbolising the body of the beloved can be observed in many ‘udhri poetic themes such as the longing for the beloved’s place and the depiction of her in the form of a phantom. These themes reveal an attempt to regain the absent body of the beloved and to rise above this absence. [new paragraph here?] Certainly, the representation of the beloved’s place in ‘udhri poetry indicates her absence, on the one hand, and the poet’s endeavour to overcome this absence, on the other. Her location acts as a symbol of her actual body. Furthermore, the bodily presence of the beloved also takes the form of gestures and speech. Gestures act in the ‘udhri tradition as a means
of communicating between the two lovers, while speech enjoys a privileged position as a factor in causing love and inflaming passion. [new paragraph here] This presence-through-absence is also discussed by examining the presence of the beloved in nature. An initial superficial view of the beloved’s depiction indicates that her presence is scattered and fragmented among natural elements such as stones, wind and water. However, a more profound observation of her depiction suggests that her existence actually absorbs these, the natural elements of the universe within which she is situated. Her remarkable omnipresence is a key feature in *al-ghazal al-‘udhri*.

One of the major contributions of this study is its examination of the representation of the lover-poet’s body. The changes in the body of the lover become signs of moral values relevant to the manners of love, and literary values of criticism. Thus, some of the changes are seen in the emanations of love and consequently become values that are sought after and that distinguish between true lovers and those who only claim to be so. I have discussed the tragic fates of the lovers in examining the phenomena of fainting, madness and death as they appear in *al-ghazal al-‘udhri*. The lover’s body manifests extreme reactions as a result of his excessive passion; that is what, on the one hand, proves his true emotion, and on the other hand, wins him a place in literary collections and anthologies on love in classical Arabic literature. By examining the depiction of the lover’s own body, I suggest that the image of the beloved is in a complete contrast to that of her lover. She is depicted as the most beautiful object, and the one who possesses eternal youth, while he is presented as a sick, thin, old mad man, who is obsessed by his passionate love.

In addressing the aforementioned areas, this study sheds new light on the body; its representations and associations in the ‘udhri tradition. In addition, this
work opens the door to new discussions on the relationship between love poetry and Arab society in the classical age. Indeed, it leaves that door open for further discussion, for it would be impossible to comprehensively address all of the questions this study has raised. For example, issues such as the valences of Islamic discourse around chastity and marriage in the period under discussion could be investigated in greater detail. This is a rich area for research especially if linked with classical Arabic literature of love poetry and prose. Also, the tragic fate of lovers in classical Arabic literature might be studied through further engagement with recent theorizations of representations of love and violence. It is hoped that this study will encourage further literary studies of representations of the body, which unfortunately remain rare for Arabic literature compared with the state of such scholarship on Western literatures. Yet the Arabic sources are immensely rich and varied. In this way, this study is only a beginning for what may be hoped will be an entirely new approach to classical Arabic literature.
Bibliography

Primary sources:

Al-Qur'ān al-Karīm.


Al-Bayhaqī, Abū Bakr Aḥmad b. al-Husayn. Kitāb shuʿab al-īmān,


Al-Tawhīdī, Abū Ḥayyān. al-Hawāmil wa al-shawāmil, ed. Ḥāmid Amīn and al-Ṣayyid Ḥāmid Ṣaqr (Cairo: Maṭba‘at lajnat al-taʿlīf wa al-nashr, 1951).


**Secondary sources:**

**A: Arabic sources:**


ʻUrāwī, Muḥammad Iqbāl. “Mustawayāt ḫuḍūr al-Jasad fī al-khīṭāb al-qurʾānī”,


**B: English sources:**


Khan, Ruqayya Yasmine. Sexuality and Secrecy in the Medieval Arabic Romance of Majnun Layla (Unpublished PhD in the Department of Asian and Middle Eastern Studies, The University of Pennsylvania, 1997).


Stewart, Devin. *Emory Resources on the Middle East*,
www.mesas.emory.edu/gmesc/pdf/10_Love_Theory_Unit_All.pdf, 3 June 2008.


Appendices

Appendix I

Chapter I:

[1] كان فجاج الأرض حلقًا خاتم علي فما زداد طولا ولا عرضا

[2] كلانا بكى أو كاد يبكي صباية لصاحبه واستعجلت عبرة قلبي

[3] أبنت مع الهلاك ضيفا لأهلها وأهل قريب موسعون ذو فضل
Chapter II:

[1] وإنِّي لأرضي من بئسِي بِالذي لو أبصره الواشي لفرت يلبه بلا، وبلا، لأتسطيع، وبالمنين، وبالوعد حتى يسأم الوعد أمله وبالنظرة العجلة وبالحال محقصي أراخره لا تلقيني وأوائه.


Chapter III:

[1] فيا ليت شعري هل أبينت ليلة كليتنا حتى نرى ساطع الفجر

[2] ونست بناس أهلنا حين أقبلوا وجالوا علينا بالسيوف ووفوا وقالوا جميل بات في الحي عذنا وقد جردوا أسيافهم ثم وقفوا وفي البيت ليت الغاب لولا مخافة على نفس جمل وإلزائه لأرعنوا

[3] ألم تعلمي يا عذبة الريح أنتي أطل إذا لم أسق ريقك صاديا

[4] ولو أن جلدا غير جدك مدني وباشرني دون الشعور شريبت

[5] يا ليتنا والمنى ليست مقربة أنا تفتيك والأحراس قد رقدوا النعم لحاف القنرى المفرور يجعلها شعاره حين يختبى القر والصرد

[6] أرى الإزار على ليلى فأحدهه إن الإزار على ما ضمن محسود

[7] تمنيت من وجري بغراء أنتي إزار لها تحت الفم ليس يمان

[8] واني لمشتاق إلى ريح جيبها كما اشتاق ادريس إلى جنة الخلد

[9] وما حائمات حمن يوما وليلة على الماء يخشى العصي حوان عوافي لا يصرفون عنه لوجهه ولا هن من برد الحيامش دوان يرمين حياب الماء والمروث دونه فهن لأصوات السفاة روان باجهد مني حن شوق ولوغة عليك ولكن العدو عدائي

290
يا أكمِل الناس من قرن إلى قدم وأحسن الناس ذا ثوب وعريانا
نعم الضجيج بعيد النوم تحذبه إليك ممتلئنا نوما ويفطانا

فيا ليت شعرِي هل أبيتن ليلة بحيث أطمأنت بالحبيب المضائع

291
Chapter IV:

[1] "رأيت جبهة كالماراة الصغيرة، يزينها شعر حالك كأذناء الخيل المضفورة، إن أرسلته خلاته السلاسل، وإن مشتملة قلب عناقك كرجل سائل، ومع ذلك حافتان كانهما خطا بقم، أو سودا بحجم، قد تقوسا على مثل عين العبيرة التي لم يراعها قاصر ولم يذكرها قصر، بينما هما أنف كحد السيف المصنوع، لم يحسن به قصر، ولم يعن به طول، حتفت به وحشان كلاروجان، في بيض محض كاللحام، شق فيه فم كالخانم، تذذب المتبسم، فيه نتآيا غر، ذوات أشر، وأسانن تعد كالدير، وريق تتم إليك منه فرح الخمر، أم نشر الوضس بالسحر، ينغلب فيه لسان ذو فصاحة وبيان، يقبله عقلها وآفاق، وجواب حاضر، يلتقى دونه شفتان حمراوان كالورد، يحلبان ريقاً كالشده، تحت ذلك عنق كابيرق القضة، ركب في صدر تمثال دمية، يجلس به عضدان منتئجان لحما مكنزان شحما، وذراوان ليس فيها عظم يحس، ولا عرق يحسب، ركبت فيما فننا رقيق قصبها لين عصبها، تعد إن شنت منها الأنفل، وتركت الفصوص في حفر المفصل، وقد تبعت في صدرها حفان كانهما رملان. من تحت ذلك بطين طوي كطي القبلي المدمجة، كسي عينا كالقراطيس المدرجة. تحيط تلك العك من بصر كدهن العجاج المجو، خلف ظهر كالمجد، يتهي إلى حصر لولا رحمة الله إنا خزل، تحته كل يغدها إذا نهضت، وينهضها إذا فعدت، كانه دعس رمل، ليده سقوط ظله، يحمله فنانا لفان كانهما نضيد الحمار، تحملهما ساقان خلطان كالبردي وشيا بشر أسود، كانه حلق الزرد، ويجمل ذلك قمان كحد السنان تبارك الله في صغيرهما كيف تقيان حمل ما فوقهما، فأما سوئ ذلك تكترك أن أصفه، غير أن أحسن ما وصفه وأصف بنظم أو تثر.

[2] تريك إذا دخلت على خلاء وقد أمنت عيون الكاشحنيا (....)
وبدوا مثل حق العجاج رخصا حصانة من أكف اللامبينا
ومنتب لدابة طالت ولدلا روافدها تنمو بما يليها

[3] هصرت بعوضي رأسها فتمايلت على هضان الكشش ريا المخلط
مهفهة ببضاء غير مضادة ترابها مصقوله كالسنجيل
تصند وتبدي ن أسفل وتبثي بناظرة من وحش وجرة مظلل
وجيد كجيد الريح ليس يفاحش إذا هي نصته ولا بمعطل

[4] وما سعاد عادة البيين غذ رحلوا إلا أعن غيض الطرف مكحول

292
تجول عواصف ذي ظلم إذا ابتسمت كأنه مهل بالرائحة معلول
شجع بذي شيم من ماء محتينة صاف بأطلع أحشى وهو ممثول
[5]
سقنتي شمس يخجل القدر نورها ويفكس ضوء البرق وهو بروق
[6]
تغلي الظلم بالأغصان كأنها منارة ممسكي راهب متبتتل
[7]
أنيري مكان القدر إن أقل القدر وقومي مقام الشمس ما ستأخير الفجر
فقيع من الشمس المنيرة ضوءها وليست لها منك التبسم والغر
لك الشفقة الليلاء والقدر طالع وليس لها منك الترائب والنجر
ومن أين الشمس المنيرة بالضحى بكمكولة العينين في طرفها فتر
وأتى لها من دل ليلي إذا اندت بعيني مهة الرمل قد مسها الذعر
[8]
فقال: أين مسكنها ومن هي فقت: الشمس مسكنها السماء
[9]
أقول لأصحابي هي الشمس ضوؤها قريب ولكن في تناولها بعد
[10]
خذا بدمي إن مت كل خريدة مريضة جبن العين والطرف فاتر
[11]
فما طبية أدباء وفاضحة الفرا تنص إلى برد الطلال غزالها
تحت بقرنيها نبر ارارا والتمشي بألفيتها إذا الغصن طالها
بأحسن منها مقلة ومقلدا ويجيدا إذا دانت تتوسط شكالها
[12]
سيتني بعيني طيبة يستنبلها أغن لبام بأعيس اللون راشح
إلى ارك بالجزع من بطن بيشة على يمين الحمام النوراح
كان القماري الهواتف بالضاحي إذا أظهرت قناني شرب صوادح
[13]
كان قرفنا وسحيق مسك وصوب الغليان شمل فاها
كان المدام وصول الغمام وريج الخزامي وذوب العمل.

يعل به بردى أنىها إذا النجم وسط السماء استقل.

سيبك بمصفول أشره إذا ابتسمت في طيب ريح وفي برد
كان عتق الراح خالص رفيفا وصفو غريض المزن صفقة بالشهد.

وأما قيوه صهباء في متنعن بحوران يعلو حين قضى شراره
لها محصنت حولها هن مثلما عوائق أرجها لبع تجارها
بأطيب من فيها إذا المسلك بله من الليل أروى ديمة وقطرها.

وذي أشر عذب الرضاب كانه إذا غار أرداف الثريا السوابح
مجاعة نحل في أباريق صفقت بصفة الغوادي شعشتته المجد.
تروى عيون اللاتي لا يطمئنها ويروى برياحا الصباع المكافحة
وغير يغادي ظلمه ببدانها مع الفجر من نعوان أخضر ماتيح.
قضي كل ذي دين وعزة خلة له لم تنه فهو عطشان قاح.

كان فشيت المسلك خالص نسرا تغل به أرداتها والمرافق.
تقوم إذا قامته به من فراشها وغدو به من حضنها من تعاق.

إذا نحن أدلنا ونلت أمامتنا كفي لمطايةنا بريحك هاديا.

أيت الرواد والثدي لقصصها مس البطون وأن تمس ظهورا.

وتحتهما حققان قد ضربتهما قطر من الجوزاء ملتبدان.

إذا ما مشت شبرا من الأرض أزحفت من البحر حتى ما تزيد على شير
لها كفف يرتدي منها إذا مشت ومت كخصن البحار مضطمر الخصر.
يا أكمل الناس من قرن إلى قدم وأحسن الناس ذا ثوب وعريانا

هي البدر حسننا والنساء كواكب وشبان ما بين الكواكب والبحر

كأنى أرى الناس المحبين بعدها عصارة مصل الحنطل المتفق
فكره عيني بعدها كل منظر ويكره سمعي بعدها كل منطق

رهبان مدني والذين عهدتهم يبكون من حذر العذاب قدودا
لو يسمعون كما سميت حديثا خروا لعزة ركما وسجودا
والموت ينشر أن تمس عظامه مسا ويخلد أن يراك خلودا

أراني إذا صليت بمتى نحوها بوهجي وإن كان المصلي ورانا
وما بي إشراك ولكن حبها وعظم الجويا أغيا الطبيب المداوا

وأتت التي إن شنت أشقيت عيشتي وأنت التي إن شنت أنعمت باليا

وما هو إلا أن أراها فجآة فأبهت حتى ما أكاد أجيب

تقول بثينة إذ أنصرت قوا من الشعر الأحمر
برأسي كبرت وأودى الشباب فقلت مجبيا لها أقصري
أتسمى أيامنا باللوي وأيامنا بذوي الأجر
أما كنت أبصرتي مرة ليالي نحن بذي جهور
ليالي أنتم لنا جبارة ألا تذكرين بلي فاذكري
وإذا أنا أعيد غض الشباب أجر الرداء مع المنذر
وإذا لمتي كجناح الغراب ترجل بالمسك والعنبر
فغير ذلك ما تعلمين تغير ذا الزمن المنكر
وأتت كلاً مرة المزبان بما شبابك لم تعسري

295
قريباً مريعاً ولگد فكيف كبرت ولم تكبري
[31]
كأني أنادي صخرة حين أعراضت من الصم لتمشي بها العصم زلت
صفح فما تطلعك إلا بخيلة فمن مل منها ذلك الوصل ملت
[32]
أتم تعلمي يا أم ذي الودع أني أضحك ذكرأكم وآنت صالود
[33]
إني إليك بما وعدت شأ يناظر نظر القفر إلى الغني المكثر
بعد الدوين وليس ينجز موعدا هذا الغرينا لنا وليس بمعسر
ما آنت والودع الذي تعدينني إلا كبر قحابة لم تمتطر
[34]
ووالله ما قاربت إلا تباعدت بصرم ولا أكثرت إلا أقثلت
[35]
منى يشتقني منك القوار يندهب وسهم المانيا من وصالتكم أقرب
فيعبد وعد وشياق ورحفة فلا آنت تنديني ولا أنا أبعد
كعصفورة في كف طفل يزمنا تدوخ حياح الموت والطفل يلعب
فلا الطفل ذو عقل برق لما بها ولا الطير ذو ريش يطير فيهذهب
[36]
إني عشية رحنت وهي حزينه ينحو إلى صيبة تصبر
وتقول بث عادي فديشك ليلة أنشكو إليك فإن ذاك يسير
[37]
وما انتصفت أما النساء فيفعضت إلي وأنا بالتنوال فضنت
[38]
أي سيبي بنا أو أحسني لا ملومة لدينا ولا مظلمة إذ تقلت
[39]
يهوكي ما عشت القوار وإن أممت يتبع صدائي صداك بين الأثير
[40]
وإني لأهوي الحضر إن قيل أنتي وعفراء يوم الحضر ملتقيان
Chapter V:

[1] إذا اكتملت عيني بعينك لم تزل بخير وجلت غمرة عن فواديا

[2] نظرت إليها نظرة ما يسرني بها حمر أنعم البلاد وسودها

[3] إذا نظرت نحوه تلك طرفها وجاوها طرفها ونحن سكون فواحة منها تبشر باللقاء وأخرى لها نفسي تكاد تموت

[4] منعت من التسليم يوم وداعها فودعتها بالطرف والعين تتمتع وأخرست عن رد الجواب فمن رأى محبًا بدم العين قليا يودع

[5] كلانا مظهر للناس يغضا وكل عند صالحه مكن وأسرار الملاحظ ليس تخفي إذا نطقت بها تخفي العيون

[6] ولكن جعلت اللحظ بيني وبينها رسولا فأدى ما تجن الضماير

[7] وطرفك إما جنتنا فاحفظه فذيع الهوى باد لمن يتبصر وأعرض إذا لاقت عينا تخافها وظاهر ببغيض إن ذلك أستر.. فمازلت في إعمال طرفك نحننا إذا جنت حتى كاد حبك يظهر

[8] فأتسمت لا أنسى لعزة نظرة لها كدت أبدي الوجود مني المجمعا عشية أومت والعيون حواضر إلى يرجع الكف ألا تكلما
وأما هو إلا أن أراه فجاءة فأبهشت حتى ما أكاد أجيب
وأصرف عن رأبي الذي كنت أرتني وأنسى الذي أعددت حين تغيب
ويظهر قلبي عذرا ويعينها علي فما لي في الفواد نصيب

وأما الذي اجتيب المنيه طرفه فمن المطالب والقتل القاتل

وما ذرفت عيناك إلا لتضربي بسهميك في أعار قلب مقتل

إن العيون التي في طرفها حور قلتنا ثم لم يجمع قلتنا
يصر عن ذا اللب حتى لا حراك به ولهن أضعف خلق الله أركانا

خذوا بدمي – إن ممت، كل خريدة مريضة جفن العين والطرف فائر

ريم رمي قاصدا قلبي بمقتله أفيده من قاصد قلبي وأحميه

إني أصيد وما لمثل قوة ظلبا يموت إذا رأى الصائد

يجيء بريها الصبا كل ليلة وتمعنا الأحلام في كل مرقد

إذا ما أتاه الركب من نحو أرضه تنفس بنشفي برائحة الركب

لكل حديث عنده بشاشة وكل قتيل عندهن شهيد
غراء مسام كان حديثها در تحرد نظمه منثور

وحديثها كالغيث يسمعه راعي ستين تابعت جدبا
فأصاخ يرجع أن يكون حياً ويوال من فرح هيا ربا

وكأن تحت لسانها هاروت يفقت فيه سحرا
وكأن رجع حديثها قطع الرياض كسيب زهرا

فما مكفر في رحى مرجعنا ولا ما أسرت في معانها النخل
بأحلى من القول الذي قلت بعدما تمكن في حيزهم نافقي الرجل

بقلتنيما بحديث ليس يفقت ولا مكونه بادي
فهن بيدين من قول يسبس به مواقع الماء من ذي الغلة الصادق

وبثنة قد قالت وكل حديثها إلينا ولو قالت بسوء ممثل

ولباطل ممن أحب حديثه أشهى إلي من البغيض البازل

(لا والذي تسجد الجبه له) مالي بما دون ثوبها خير
ولا بغيها ولا هممت بها ما كان إلا الحديث والنظر

ألا ليت شعري هل نبيت ليلة كليلتنا حتى نرى ساطع الفجر
تجود علينا بالحديث وتارة تجد علينا بالرضاب من اللغر

ألا ليت شعري هل نبيت ليلة أناجيكم حتى أرى غرة الفجر
ولو كنت أغمي أخفت الأزمن ببعض أسم فنانتي أجبت المناديا

أنا ليتي أغمي أسم تبوي بثينة لا يخفى على كلامها

وأتبيتي حتى إذا ما فنانتي يقول بعل العصم سهل الأباطخ تجافيت على حين لا لي حيًا وغادرت ما غادرت بين الجوانح

فلا أنها تبدو الحمام أجنبها ولو كلمت ميتا إذا تكلما

ولو بذلت أم الويلد حين دينها بعصم برذوى أصبحت تتقلرب تهبطن من أكنت ضاس وأيزة إليها ولو أعزى بين المكلب

طاف الخيال لأهل عزة موهنا بعد العدو فهاج لي أحزاني فالم من أهل يوبيب خيلها يعرف من أهل ذي ذروان

فما بي من سقم ولا طيف ذهتنا ولكن عبد الأعرجي كذوب

قد زارني طيفكم ليلا فارقني فيت للشوق أذري الدمع تهتنا

أسرى لخاندأ الخيال ولا أرى طلا أحب من الخيال الطارق

ألم خيال من بثينة طارق على النبي مشتكى إلى وشاق سرت من تلاو الحجر حتى تخلصت إلى ودوني الأشمون وعاق

أمنك سرى يا بين طيف ذوي هدا فهاج القلب شوقك ونصب
عجبت له أن زار في النوم مضجعي ولو زارني مستيقظا كان أعجبا

[40]
واني لاستغشتي وما بي نعسة لعل لقاء في المنام يكون

[41]
واني لاستغشتي وما بي نعسة لعل خيالا منك يلقى خياليا

[42]
أفي النوم يا ليلي رأيتك أم أنا رأيتك يقظنا فعندى شهودها
ضمتمك حتى قلت ناري قد انطلقت فلم تطف نيراني وزاد وقودها

[43]
فهلا منعمت. إذ منعمت حديثها خيالا يوافقني على النأي هاديا

[44]
زار الخيال لها لا بل أزاركه فكر إذا نام فكر الحلق لم ينم
طلبي تقصصته لما نصبت له في آخر الليل أشراكا منحلم

[45]
تنمائه طلبي في الكرى فتغبي وقبلت يدنا ظله فتعتبا

[46]
يا عاشقين اصطلحا في الكرى فأصبحوا غضبي وغضبنا
كذلك الأحلام غرارة وربما تصدق أحيانا

[47]
أفي كل يوم أنت رام بلادها بعينين إنسانهما غرقان
ألا فاحملاني -بارك الله فيكم- إلى حاضر الروحاء ثم دعاني

[48]
ألا أيها البيت الذي لا أزوره وهجرانه مني إليه ذنوب
هجرتك مشتاقا وزرتلك خانقا وفلك على الدهر منك رقيب

[49]
أصد وببي مثل الجنون لكي يرى رواة الخنا أني ليبتاك هاجر
أترك ليلى ليس ببني وبينها سوى ليلة إني إذا لصور
هونئي أمرنا منكم أصل بعتبر له ثم ذمة إن الذمام كبير
وللحصب المتروك أعظم حرمة على صاحب من أن يضل بعد
عفا الله عن ليلي الغداة فإنها إذا وليت حكما علي تجور
أمر على الديار ديار ليلى أقل ذا الجدار وذا الجدارا
 وما حب الديار شغف قلبي ولكن حب من سكن الديارا
 وما أحببت أرضكم ولكن أقل إثر من وظي الترابا
خليلني هذا ربيع عزة فاعقتا قوسكما ثم ابكي هنا حيث حلت
 ومسا رابا كان قد جلدها وبيتا وظلا حيث باتت وظلت
ولا تتأسنا أن يمحو الله عنناذ ما إذا صليتما حيث صلت
أحن إلى نجد فإنني ليس طوال الليل من قول إلى نجد
 وإن يك لا ليلي ولا نجد فاعترف بهجر إلى يوم القيامة والوعد
ألا يا صبا نجد منى هجت من نجد فقد زادني مسراك وجد على وجد
يغور إذا غارت فوادي وإن تكن ينجد يهم مني الفواد إلى نجد
وأجهشت للنواب حبين رأيته واهل للرحمن حين رأني
فقدل له أين الذين عهدتهم حوليك في خصب وطيب زمان
وإن الكثيب الفرد من جانب الحمي إلى - وإن لم آنه - لحبب

كان القلب ليلة قبل يغدى بليلي العلمية أو يراح قطانة غراها شرك الفتاح وهو عقل الجناح

متي يشفي منك الفوارد المذب وسهم المنايا من وصالك أقرب
فبعد ووجد واشتياق ورحفة فلا أنت تدنيني ولا أنا أبعد كعصر في كف طفل بهما تذوق حباك الموت وال طفل يلعب فلا الطفل ذو عقل برق لما بها ولا الطير ذو ريش يطير فيذهب

ألا ليتنا كنا غزاليين يرثنا رياضنا من الحوذان في بلد فقر
ألا ليتنا كنا حماسي مفاضة نظهر وأنوأ بالعشي إلى وكر ألا ليتنا وانتان في البحر نرتمني إذا نحن أمسينا نلحن في البحر وباليتنا نحنما معا وليتنا نصبر إذا متنا ضريحين في قبر

فإن نسيم الجو يجمع بيننا ونبصر قرن الشمس حين تزول وأرحاها بالليل في الحي تلتقي (ونعلم انا بالنها نقيل)
فما طلع النجم الذي يهتدى به ولا الصبح إلا هيجا ذكرها ليا

وشغلت عن فهم الحديث سوى ما كان منك وحكم شغلي وأدم نحو محدثي مبأر أن قد فهمت وعندكم عقلي
أريد لأنسي ذكرها فكأنما تمتل لي ليلي بكل سبيل
Chapter VI:

[1]
لقد ثبتت في القلب منكم مودة كما ثبتت في الراحتين الأصياع

[2]
أتيكي علي لبني وأنت تركتها وكننت كانت حتفه وهو طائع
فيا قلب صيرا واعترفا لما ترى ويا حبها قع بالذي أنت واقع
ويا قلب خوتي إذا شنت النواه لبني وبانتك عنك ما أنت صانع
كأنك بدع لم تر الناس قبلها ولم يطلعك الدهر فيم يطالع

[3]
ما بال قلبك يا مجنون قد خلعا في حب من لا ترى في نبيله طمعا

[4]
ألا ليتنا يا عز كنا لذي غنى بعرين نرعى في الخلاء ونعزب
كلانا به عر من بارى يقل على حسنها جرياء تعدي وأجرب
إذا ما وردننا مهلا صاح أهله علينا فما تفك نرمي ونضرب
تكون بعيري ذي غنى فيضيأنا فلا هو يرعانا ولا نحن نطلب

[5]
ولست على بذل الصفاء هيئتها ولكن صبتي بالدلالي وبالبخل

[6]
وقال آفق حتى متى أنت هائم بثيئة فيها قد تعود وقد تبدي؟
فقلت له: فيها قضي الله ما ترى علي، وهل فيما قضى الله من رد
فإن كان رشدا جبها أو غواية فقد جنته ما كان مني على عمد

[7]
عدمتلك من حب أما منك راحة وما بك عنك من توان ولا فتر
رمي الله في عيني بثينة بالفجى وفي الغر من أنبائها بالقوادح

لا ليتي أعمى أصم تقوادي بثينة لا يخفى على كلامها

وقلت لقلبي حين لج بي الهوى وكلفني ما لا يطيق من الحب
لا أنها القلب الذي قاده الهوى أفق لا أقر الله عينك من قلب

صادت فوادي يا بثين حبالكم يوم الحجون وأخطائك حبايلي

قضاها لخيري وإيبلاني يحبها فهل بشيء غير ليلي إيبلانيا

دعا المحرمون الله يستغفرهن حمكة شعثا كي تمحى ذنوبها
وناديون يا رحمى أول سؤالي لنفسي ليلي ثم أنت حسبها
وإن أعط ليلي في حياتي لم يكتب إلى الله عد توبة لا أتوها

يا حبدا عمل الشيطان من عمل إن كان من عمل الشيطان حبها

وقالوا نأتم فاضتر من الصبر والبكا فقلت البكا أشفى إذن لغليلي

تداويت من ليلي بليلي عن الهوى كما يداوي شارب الخمر بالخمر

فيا حبة زدني جوى كل ليلة ويا سلالة الأياز موعدك الحشر

رفعت عن الدنيا المنى غير ودها فما آسال الدنيا ولا أستزيدها
وعاذتين ألحنوا في محبتها يا لببهم وجدوا مثل الذي أجد لما أطلوا عتابي فيك قلت لهم: لا تثترموا بعض هذا اللوم واقصدوا
[1] يا أحكم الناس من قرن إلى قدم وأحسن الناس ذا توب وعربان
[2] تقول بثينة إذ أبصرت قفوا من الشعر الأحمر
برأسي كبرت وأودي الشباب فقلت مجيبا لها أقصري
أنسنس أيامنا باللوا وآيامنا بذوى الأجرف
أما كنت أبصرتني مرة ليالي نحن بذي جهور
ليالي أتمن لنا جيرة ألا تذكرين بل ذاكرب
[3] وإذا أنا أغيد غض الشباب أجر الرداء من المنزور
إذ لمتني أكتناب الغرام ترجل بالمسك والعنبر
فغبر ذلك ما تعلمين تغير ذا الزمن المنكر
وأنت كلولوة المرزبان بما شبابك لم تعصري
قربان مرتبنا واحدا فكيف كبرت ولم تكبري
[4] فقا نبك من ذكرى حبيب ومنزل بسقط اللوى بين الدخول فحومل
[5] خليبي ما ألقى من الوجد باطن ودمعي بما أخفي الغدة شهيد
[6] وأية وجد الصب تهطل دمعه ودعم الشجي الصب أعلى شاهد
[7] أقول لمااء العينين أمعن لعله بما لا يرى من غائب الوجد يشهد
هل الحب إلا عبارة ثم زفرة وحر على الأحشاء ليس له يرد
وفيض دموع تستهل إذا بما علم من أرضكما لم يكن يبدو

307
وقالوا ذات فاختير من الصسر والبكا فقتل البكا أشفى إذن لغيلي

وليس الذي يجري من العين ماوها ولكنها نفس تذوب وتتغطر

إذا أحن أنفدت البكاء عشبة فمو عدنا قرن من الشمس طالع

 وإن اهتمال الدمع يا ليل كلما ذكرتك يوما خاليا لسريع

وما كنت أدرى قبل عزة ما البكا ولا موجعات القلب حتى تولت

بكية نعم بككيت وكل إلف إذا بانت قريبته بكاه

أفي كل يوم أنت رم بلادها بعينين انسانهما غرقان

إذا بصرت بها العينان لجت بدعمهما مع النظر اللجوج

ولو أن عيننا طاوعتي لم تزل ترقق دمعا أو دما حين تسكب

أعراها كم من زفارة قد أشقنتي وحزن أتج العين بالهفلان

فلو أن عيني ذي هوى فاضتنا دما لفاست دما عيناي تبدران

أنت في حل فزدني سفما أفن صبري واجعل الدمع دما

وما حانات حمن يوما وليلة على الماء يخشين العصي حوان

عوافي لا يصدرون عنه لوجهة ولا هن من برد الحياض دون

يرين حباب الماء والمغوت دونه فهن لأصوات السفاة روان
باجهد مني حر شوق وولوعة عليك ولحن العدو عدائي

[20]
ومكم زفارة لي لو على البحر أشرقت لأشفه حر لها ولهيب

[21]
لاحت لعينك من بثينة نار فسوم عينك دواء وغزار

[22]
بي الباس أو داء الهيام أصابني فايلك عني لا يصيبك ما بيا

[23]
متي تكشف عنى القبيص تبينا بيا القبر من عفراء يا قتيان
وعترفا لحما قليلا وأعظم دافعا وقليا دام الخلقان

[24]
جعلت لعراف اليمامة حكمه وعرف نجد إن هما شفياني
فما تركا من رقية يعلمانها ولا شربة إلا وقد سقياني
قالا شفاك الله ونها مالنا بما حملت منك الضلوع بدان

[25]
طببيان لو داويتماني أجرتما فما لكرما تستغذين عن الأجر
قالا بحزن مالك اليوم حيلة فمت كبدا أو عز نفسك بالصربر

[26]
أرى أهل ليالي أورثوني صبابة وما لي سوى ليالي الغداة طبيب

[27]
يا بتن جودي وكافي عاشقا دفنا وشفي بذلك أسقامي وأوجعي

[28]
عيد قيس من حب ليبني ولئني داء قيس والحب داء شديد
وإذا عادني العوائد يوماً قالت العين لا أرى من أريد
ليت لبني تعودني ثم أقضي إني لا تعود فيمن يعود
[29]
وللحب آيات تبين بالفتي شحوب وتعرى من يديه الأشاعج
[30]
كلفها بما أذابني الهوى وصير عظمي بالعظام رميا
[31]
لقد لاقت من كلفي بعنى بلاه ما أسيج به الشرابا
[32]
بنا من جويا الأحزان في الصدر لوحة تكاد لها نفس المشق تنزوب
ولكنما أبقى حشاشة معول على ما به عود هناك صليب
[33]
ويجبني من جعفر أن جعفر ملح على قرص وبكي على جمل
فل كنت عندي العلاقة لم تكن بطينا وأنساك الهوى كثرة الأكل
[34]
مازال حبك في فوادي ساكننا وله يزيد تنقسي ترديد
[35]
واني لأغشى من عشقك تحولني وكل أمرنا ناحل
[36]
إن في بردي جسما ناحلا لو تركات عليه لانهدم
[37]
أبليت جسمي من بعد جدته فما تكاد العيون تبصره
[38]
رعاة الليل ما فعل الصباح وما فعلت أو انله الملاح
ومابال الذين سوا فوادي أقاموا أم أجد بهم رواح
وما بلال النجوم معلقات بقلب الصب ليس لها براح
رعاة الليل كونوا كيف شنتتم فد أودي بي الحب المتاح

كليني لهم يا أميمة ناصب وليل آفاسيه بطيء الكواكب
تطاول حتى قلت ليس منقض وليس الذي يرعى النجوم بأطيب

وليل بت أكلوه كاني سليم أو سهرت على السليم
أراعي من كواكب هجازا سواما ما تريع إلى السيم
فأقسم لو سألت دجاج علي لقد أنبلك عن وجد عظيم

كاني من ليبني سليم مسهد يظل على أيدي الرجال يعيد
 فلا البعد يسليمي ولا القرب مافعي وليلي طويل والسهام شديد
أمن أجل سار في دجي الليل لامع جفوف حذار البين لين المضايع

فإن تسألوني بالنساء فإني بصير بأدوار النساء طبيب
إذا شاب رأس المرء أو قل ماه فليس له من وده نصيب
يردن ثراء المال حيث علمنه وشرخ الشباب عندهن عجيب

وفيتيت عمري باختصار وعدها وألميت فيها الدهر وهو جديد

ويامن تعلقته ناشنا فشب ومما أن لي أن أنيها

لقد عارضتني الريح منها بنفحة على كبدي من طيب أراها برد
فمازلت مغشيًا علي وقد مضت أنت أذا وعدي جواب ولا رد
أعوذ بك اللهم أن تشحذ النوى بثيجة في أدنى حياتي ولا حشر
وحاول إذا ما مت بيني وبينها فيحجزا موتا إذا جاورت قبري
فيها لينا نحيا جميعا فإن نمت تجاور في الهلكي عظامي عظامها
واني لأهوى الحضر إن قيل أنتي وعفراء يوم الحضر ملتقين

من كان من أخواتي بكيا ابدا فاليوم اني أراني اليوم مقوضا

يسعيني فإني غير سامعه إذ علوت رقب القوم معرفوا

قد مات قبلية أخو هند وصاحبه مرقن واشتكي من عروة المكمد

وكلهم كان من عشاق مينته وقد وجدت بها فوق الذي وجدوا

إني لأحسب أو قد كنت أعلم أنه سوف توردني الحوض الذي وردوها

ما إن صبا مثلى جميل فاعلمي حقا ولا المقتل عروة إذ صبا

خليلي فيما عشتيا هل رأيتما قتيلا بكى من حب قاتله قبلى

ولو أن داع متلك يدعو جنائزتي وكتبت على أيدي الرجال حبيت

ولو شهديت حين تحضر مبتني جلا سكرات الموت عني كلامها

لقد هم قيس أن يزج بنفسه ويرمي بها من ذروة الجبل الصعب

فلا غرو أن الحب للمرء قاتل يقبله ما شاء جنبها إلى جنب

أطلوم حان إلى القبور ذهابي ونيت قبل الموت في أثاوي

جرعني عصص المنية بالهوى أما بعيشك ترحمين شبابي

ما يعرف الحزن إلا كل من عشقا وليس من قال إني عاشق صدقا
للمشتبهين احترام الشجاعة من طول ما حالفًا الأحزان والأرقا

ما أنك يا بني لترح الالباب شبيب رأسي قبل حين المشيب
أنحل جسمي وبري أعظمي لدع حرارات فراق الحبيب...
أورث قلبي من جوى حبه داء عباء ماله من طبيب
Appendix II

The aspects of bodily presence in *al-ghazal al-‘udhri* (Divān Majnūn Laylā)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>The Corporeal: description of the beloved’s body</th>
<th>Desire: Longing for physical contact with the beloved</th>
<th>Gestures: Secret body language as a means of communication</th>
<th>The phantom of the beloved</th>
<th>The place of the beloved</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>وعابضون بالعفان كل ملفق به العالم لا تقل في غروب رضاب كريح الملک يغل متوتٌه من الضوء أو فرح البشام فضبيب</td>
<td>فلا النفس يسليها البعد فتنثني ولا هي عما لا تتأل تطيب 29</td>
<td>إذا ما آتاه الركب من نحو أرضه تنفس نبض بشقراً الركب 49</td>
<td>أتاني خياً منك يا ليل زائر</td>
<td>وإن الكتاب الفرد من جانب الحمي إلى وإن لم أنه لحبيب 26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تبنت لنا كالشمس تحت عمامة بدنا حاحاب منها وضنت بحاجب 31</td>
<td>أحبك يا ليلي غراماً وعشقه وليس أتاني في اللوئنصيب 46</td>
<td>إذا نظرت نحوي تكلم طرفها وجاوبتها طرفين وحنس سوكت فواحة منها تبت مثل التلقا وأخرى لها نفسي نكاد تموت 55</td>
<td>بريد أخرنني الم تائم التي أضر بجسمي من زمان خيالها 173</td>
<td>إلا أنها البيت الذي لا أزوره وهجرته مني أليك ذنوب مجريها مشتاقاً وزرتلك خانفاً فيك على الدهر منك رقيب 28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>أشارت بموشوم كان بنائه من اللين هدب الدمع الهبدي 52</td>
<td>فيا ليل جودي بالوصل فانني 32</td>
<td>إذا اتصلت علي بعينك لم تزل بخير وجلت غمرة عن فواية 229</td>
<td>سكر الله Arsca Ahle ليلي تحلها وجد علها الغيث وهو سكوب 31</td>
<td>أرى كل ارض نست فيها وإن مضت لها حمج بردار طيبة ترابها 40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قالت لجارتها يوماً تسألنها لما استحمت وألقت عينها السلياً معمر الله إلا أن كانت صادقة أصافها 54</td>
<td>فلو خلط السم الزعاف بريغها 55</td>
<td>منعت الم قلب يديها عرفتها بالطرف والعين ت нужع وأجرست عن رد الجواب فرآ رأي محباً بدم العين قلباً يودع 145</td>
<td>كلامك أشهى فاعلتي لو أنتاه إلى النفس من برر الشراب على الظما 199</td>
<td>اتهج بيتاً للحبيب تعلقت به الحب والأعداء أنت زائره 93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>مبتهلة الأعجاز زانت عقودها 74 بأحسن مما زينتها عقودها</td>
<td>واتي لمشتق إلى ريح جيبها كما اشتاق أدريس إلى جنة الخلد 82</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>من الخفارات البيض ود جليسها إذا ما انقضت أحدثها لو تعدها طائر 76</td>
<td>ألم ما لليل لا ترى عند مضجعي بليل ولا يجري بذلك</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>يكاد فضيض الماء يحش جلدها إذا اغتسلت بالماء من رقة الجند 82</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>شفي لب شعرى هل بيين ليلة حيث أطامنت بالحبيب المصمّج وله للفين رحلى إلى جنب خيمة بجرع حفتها الرجاء مطاع 140</td>
<td>إذا طلعت شمس النهار فسمي فإية تسليمي عليك طلوعها</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>رمزت بغي عن الشمس والبحر. منعمة لقاب البحر وجهها لك ولن فضل مبين على البحر هلالية الأعلى مطحنة الذرى تشجع هيئه مهوضة الخصى مبتهلة هيئة مهوضة المهر موردة الخدين واضحة الغمر خنادقة الساقين بيضية مفتوحة الألياف مصغرة العمر 115</td>
<td>أمر علي الديار دليل أيق ذا الجدار وذا الجدار وما حب الديار شغف قنّي ولكن جرب من سكن الديار 127</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>سقتني شمس يحلل البدر نورها ويكف ضوء البرق وهو بروق غريبة الفرعين بدرية السما ومنظرها بأذي الجمال نبيق 160</td>
<td>إذا سمتها التقلبل صدت وأعرضت صرده شمس الخيل صل لجامها وعرضت على إيهامها ثم ألمت: أخف عبرنا أن نهب نياما 191</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>وأجهشت للتوباء حين رأيته وهلل للرحمن حين رأي وادريت دمع العين لما رأيته ونادي بعلي صوته ودعاني فقالن له أن الذي عهدتهم حوليك في خصب وطيب زمان فقائل مسلا واستوعوبنا بلاهم ومن ذا الذي يبقى مع الحدثان 213</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>رقم</td>
<td>نص</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----</td>
<td>-----</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>191</td>
<td>فكان فيكم بعل ليلى فانتي</td>
<td>وفي الطعن بضعة المعوارض طفلاً منهما يسبب الحلم انسامها</td>
<td>237</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>83</td>
<td>يضاء بدرجها النعيم كأنها قمر توسط جنح ليل أسود</td>
<td>وتهتز ليلى العمارية فوقها ولا إت برفها غضحا جلحا إذا حرك المدرى ضارعتها العلا مجوج ندى الريحان والعنبر البارد</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>77</td>
<td>هويت فتنة كالغزالة وجهها وكلراحش يسبي دلها كل عاد</td>
<td>ففلك من الشمس المنبرة ضووعها وليس لها منك التنس والثلج. لك الشروقة اللاء والبدر طالب وليس لها منك النتاين</td>
<td>92</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>172</td>
<td>ليلي هي البدر ما لق مصطبة عنها وإن كررت فيها الأقول</td>
<td>وجه له دلبية قرشية به تكشف البلو واستنجل القطر ويبتز من تحت الباب قومها كما أهتز غصن الباب والفنين المعروف</td>
<td>182</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>106</td>
<td>وإن بدأ لتعليم نحلة إلهك كما بالحائمات غليل 170</td>
<td>من البيض كوماء العظام كأنما يلات على دعس هيبال إزارها</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>رشيد باقر</td>
<td>السماح</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>وما قوة صهباء في متنع</td>
<td>كان على أنيابها الخمر شجها</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>جحوران يعلو حين قُمْنت</td>
<td>بماء سحاب آخر الليل غلظ</td>
<td>156</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>شرارها</td>
<td>وما ذئبه إلا يعني تفرسا كما</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>لها محسنات حولها هن مثلها</td>
<td>شيم في أعلى السحابة براق</td>
<td>107</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>عواقب أرجاها لبيع تجارها</td>
<td>تأطيب من فيها ولا لتلك بل</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بأطيب من فيها ولا لتلك بل</td>
<td>من الليل أروى ديمة وقطارها</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>108</td>
<td>إن الشفاء عناق كل خريدة</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>فما أسود اليم المحاجر مطل</td>
<td>كالخزينرئان لا نعل عناقها</td>
<td>163</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بأحسن منها مقلتين تديرها</td>
<td>وقلبي كنثب في هواها ونابي في</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>108</td>
<td>وصل ليلي ما حبيب لطامع 142</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ما أنشد الشعران إلا صباية</td>
<td>نهاري نهار الناس حتى إذا بدأ</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بهذه الخدين طيبة الشر</td>
<td>لي الليل هزتني إليك المصداع 142</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>مفجلا الأنياب لو أن ريقها داوي</td>
<td>125</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>به المومي لقاموا من القرير</td>
<td>خليلي ليلي أكبر الحاج والمنى</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>فمن لن بليلي أو من ذا لها بيا 228</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>كان فرنغلا وسحوق مسک</td>
<td>وأذي لأستغشي وما بي نعمة</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>وصول الغسادين بقلما</td>
<td>سفني الله أطلاعا بناجية الحمي وإن</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>شمل فاحا</td>
<td>كن قد أذين للناس ما بيا</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>222</td>
<td>منزل لو مرت عليها جانزتها قال</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>أخذت محاسن كلما ضنت</td>
<td>الصدى: يا حاملى أنالا بيا 236</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>محاسنه بحالة</td>
<td>204</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>كاذ الغزال يكونها لولا النوى</td>
<td>وتشور فرحه 217</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>الله علم أن النفس هالكة بالليل</td>
<td>وراكم في أراكم</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
لا إما ليلي عصا خيزيتة إذا غمرها بالأكف تلتين 203 وإذا ما تمنى الناس روحًا وراحة تمنيت أن ألقاك يلب حاليا 238

ووقحوه الشدو وربا مضمرجة إذا جمشته العين عاد بنفسه شوقت لها طول ليلي بعبرة فأبت لذا باللغج درا ملحا فقتل لها منا على بلءة أداو بها كلما فقت تنججا بلبت برذف تست أعطم حمله يجابد أعهذاني إذا ما تجرجا 60

وأما ليلي في التلب تنعما فيا ليني أو كنت بعض برودها أي النوم يا ليلي رأيت أما أنا رائكة ففتانا فعندى شهودها ضعفت نملتي حتى قلت ناري قد انفتك فلم تطف نيراني وزاد وقوها 76

The physical presence of the lover himself

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Crying</th>
<th>Fainting</th>
<th>Sickness</th>
<th>Prematurely grey-haired</th>
<th>Insomniac</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ولو أن عيني طاعرتني لم تزل تفرق دمعاً أو دما حين تسكب 24</td>
<td>لقد عاضتنا الريح منها بنفحة على كيدي من طيب أرواحها بورد فمازلت مغشا علي وقد مضت أنا وما عندي جواب ولا يد 67</td>
<td>ليلك عني إني هادم وصب أما ترى الجسم قد أودى به العطب 25</td>
<td>وإن الذي أملت يا آم مالك أشَّاب فودي واستهم فودا 228 وما بالنجوم معلقات بقلب الصب ليس لها براج 61</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>فقت وعيني تستهل دموعها وأنا في حمسي لي من الأرض مضحي وأصرع أحياناً فانتزاز الأراضي 31</td>
<td>ورأكم إني لقيت من الهوى كبدا ليست بذات قروح 235 أبيع ولي الناس لا يشترونا ومن أبيني طول والشهد شديد 69</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
يهتري ذا علة بصحة

وكم زفارة لي لو على البحر

أزرقت لأنشقت حر لها ولطيب

أرى أهل لي لي آرتوني صبابية وما

لى سوي لي في الغدا طبيب 29

أرى أهل لي لي آرتوني صبابية وما

للهوى نسوى بلبد

أرعاري الفقيدين مع الثريا كذلك

الحب أهونه شديد 72

سلي الليب على هله أدنو رفاهه

وهل لضحوه مستقر على

فرشي 131

فأهكي لنفيس رحمة من جفاتها

وبيكي من الهجران بعضي على

بغنيسي من زمان خيالها

133

لعمرك ما معاد عينك والبكا

بليكلاك لا أن تنب جنوب

70

فدعني وما ألقاه من الم الهوى ينار

لها بين الضروع وقود

أعالج من نفسي خباشة على

رمني والروح في توجد

134

ومزتعون بالمرج يهكي يسروعه

وقد غاب عنه المسعون على

الحب

49

فلان ما أبقت مني معلق بعود

ثمام ما تارود عدها

75

فقد طال ليلي واستهلت مدامع

وغضبت جفحتي والإغرام يزيد

70

اهيم بكم في كل يوم وليلة جنونا

وجسمي بالسقم موكلا

168

واني ممنوع من النوم مدنف

وعيناه من وجد الأسي تكفان

213

لم نزل ملقتي تقيص ى بديع يشبه

الغيب بعد أن قضتها...

59

يقول لأسو عل مجانو ابن عامر

يروه سلوا قلت أن لا نم بيا

بي الياس أو داء الهيام أصابني

فإليك عن لا ين ك ما بيا

229

أقول لحادي عبر ليلي وقد برى

ثيابي يجري الدموع فيها فبلت

57

كلفت بها أذاني الهوي وصير

عظمي بالعظام رمما

201

203
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>البنك</th>
<th>الفئة</th>
<th>المقدمة</th>
<th>المراجع</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>بنك XX Berkat</td>
<td>XX</td>
<td>XXXXX</td>
<td>123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بنك XX Alkhair</td>
<td>XX</td>
<td>XXXXX</td>
<td>123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بنك XX Almahkamah</td>
<td>XX</td>
<td>XXXXX</td>
<td>123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بنك XX Alkhair</td>
<td>XX</td>
<td>XXXXX</td>
<td>123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بنك XX Berkat</td>
<td>XX</td>
<td>XXXXX</td>
<td>123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بنك XX Almahkamah</td>
<td>XX</td>
<td>XXXXX</td>
<td>123</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**ملاحظات:**
- **بنك XX Berkat** هو البنك الرئيسي في المنطقة ويشمل العديد من الفروع والخدمات المالية.
- **بنك XX Alkhair** يقدم خدمات البنوك العامة ويعمل في مختلف البلدان.
- **بنك XX Almahkamah** هو البنك الثاني في المنطقة ويشمل العديد من الفروع والخدمات المالية.

**المراجعات:**
- 123: مراجعات مالية عن البنوك في المنطقة.
- 123: مراجعات مالية عن البنوك في المنطقة.
- 123: مراجعات مالية عن البنوك في المنطقة.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>الوقت إذا ما أعزز النعم أهله</th>
<th>وانت التي صبرت جسمية زجاجة</th>
<th>تتم على ما تحتويه الأضلاع 143</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>فلان ينعو عني في دانيم البكا</td>
<td>برى حبها جسمى وقلبى ومهجتي</td>
<td>فلم يبق إلا أعظم وعروق 160</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ولن يخرجوا ما قد أجن ضميري</td>
<td>قد صدع الشمل المشتى</td>
<td>أرى سقما في الجسم أصبح ثاوا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>فقلت لاصحابي ودمعي مسبل</td>
<td>وقد جد بي وجد وفاقت راهمداميي وق زاد ما اضدعت عليه</td>
<td>أرى سقما في الجسم أصبح ثاوا وحزننا طويلا رانحا ثم غاديا 238</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>وقد جد بي وجد وفاقت</td>
<td>الأضلاع 142</td>
<td>لو تعلمى إذا ما غبت ما سبمى</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قد جد بي وجد وفاقت راهمداميي وق زاد ما اضدعت عليه</td>
<td>لا ان ادوانى يلي قديمة واقتل داء</td>
<td>وكيف تسهر عني لم تلومي 217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>الأضلاع 142</td>
<td>العائلين قديمها. خليلي فوما</td>
<td>لا ان ادوانى يلي قديمة واقتل داء</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قد جد بي وجد وفاقت راهمداميي وق زاد ما اضدعت عليه</td>
<td>بالعاصبة فاصبا على كيد لم يبق</td>
<td>لا ان ادوانى يلي قديمة واقتل داء</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قد جد بي وجد وفاقت راهمداميي وق زاد ما اضدعت عليه</td>
<td>لا ان ادوانى يلي قديمة واقتل داء</td>
<td>لا ان ادوانى يلي قديمة واقتل داء</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قد جد بي وجد وفاقت راهمداميي وق زاد ما اضدعت عليه</td>
<td>لا ان ادوانى يلي قديمة واقتل داء</td>
<td>لا ان ادوانى يلي قديمة واقتل داء</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>وكنлимاس وسط صححي ولم أكن</td>
<td>لا ان ادوانى يلي قديمة واقتل داء</td>
<td>لا ان ادوانى يلي قديمة واقتل داء</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>وأبيكرما وسط صححي ولم أكن</td>
<td>لا ان ادوانى يلي قديمة واقتل داء</td>
<td>لا ان ادوانى يلي قديمة واقتل داء</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ولا ما النعم يا ليل كلما</td>
<td>لا ان ادوانى يلي قديمة واقتل داء</td>
<td>لا ان ادوانى يلي قديمة واقتل داء</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ذكرى يو ماما خاليا لسريع</td>
<td>لا ان ادوانى يلي قديمة واقتل داء</td>
<td>لا ان ادوانى يلي قديمة واقتل داء</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>وأتي وإن لم ألح ليلي وأهلهيا لباك</td>
<td>لا ان ادوانى يلي قديمة واقتل داء</td>
<td>لا ان ادوانى يلي قديمة واقتل داء</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
 وقد تذوقت عني ليلي وأتبت قداها وقد يأتي على العين شومها

 وأنت التي قطعت قلبي حزارة ورقرت دمع العين فهي سجوم

 فمن أجل ليلي تولع العين بالبكا وتاوي إلى نفس كثير همومها

 ولا سبب عني لها من سمية من الناس إلا بل دمعي رداني

 جرى السيل فاستكاني السيل إذ جرى وافست له من مقتني غروب 28

 وافقى من الحب المبرح لوعة لها بين جلدي والعظام دبيب 30

The death:

متي یشچغي منك الفواد المذعك وسهم المنايا من وصاک أقرب 
فبعد وجد واشیاق ورجهة فلا أنت تذني ولا أنت أبعد
كعصفورة في كف طفل يبزمه تدوى حياض الموت والطفل يلعب
فلا الطفل ذو عقل يرق لما بها ولا الطير ذو ريش يطير فيهب 23

أقطع جبل الوصل فالموت دونه أم أشرب كأسا منکم ليس يشرب 23

فلو تزلفت أرحا لنا بعد موتنا ومن دون رسمينا من الأرض منكب
نظل صدى رسلي وإن كنت رمة لصوت صدى ليلي يهيب وبطرب 24
لولا سيل، أهل الهوى من بعد موتهم هل فرجت عفك من متى الكرب
نقال صادقهم أن قد بلغ جسدي فلك نار الهوى في القلب تنذهب 25

لقد هم قيس أن يرج بفسله ويرمي بها من درو جبل الصعب
فلا غرو أن الحب الممرق قائل يقظبه ما شاء جنب
اناخ هوه ليلى به فاذبه ومن ذا يطبق الصبر عن محمل الحب
فيسقي كأس الموت قبل أوانه ويورده قبل الممات إلى التربة

إذا مت خوف اليأس أحياني الرجا فكم مرة قد مت ثم حبيت 55

أيا حب ليلى عافني قد قلتني وكيف تعافيني وأنت تزيد 68

قدعني وما ألقاه عن أهل الهوى بنار لها بين الضلع وغقدم
أعلج من نفس يقاي حشاشة على رمي والروح في تجود 70

خليلي هل ليلى مؤدية مدي إذا قلتني أو ألم يقدها
وكيف تقاد النفس بالنفس لم تقل قتلت، ولم يشهد عليها شهدها 74

فيا حبا الأحياء ماامت فيهم ويا حبا الأموات إن ضمك القر 94

فلا تعدوني تكسون خطبتتي فحالة مثل لمات مصيرها 108

فقالوا أمجنون فقلت موسوس أطول بظهر البيد قررا إلى قفر
فلا ملك الموت المريح يريحني ولا أنا ذو عيش ولا أنا ذو صبر 115

مناي دفين في الهوى متفقا فقد مت إلا أنني لم يزور قبري
عليك سلام يا غاية المنفى وقابلتي حتى القيامة والحشر 117

مضي لي زمان لو أخيرٌ بينه وبين حياتي خادمًا أبعد الدهر
لقت ذروني ساعة وكلماتها على غفلة الواشين ثم أقطعوا عمري
فأنا، والله العزيز مكانته لقد كاد روحني أن يزول بلا أمر
خليلي مرة بعد موتى تبعتني وقال لين الله ذا قبيل من الهجر
ويا ليتنا نحيا جميعاً وليتنا نصير إذا متنا ضعفيين في قبر
ضعفيين في قبر عن الناس معزل وتفرون يوم البعثة والعشر والنشر
طيبين لو داويمني أجرت ما لما تستغني عن الأجر.
فقالا بحزن مالك اليوم حيلة مفت كمدا أو عز نفسك بالصبر.
وقالا دواء الحب قال ودواه رخيص ولا يبتلك شيء كم يدر.
فما برحا حتى كتبته وصيتي ونشرت أفكارني وقتلا أفرح في قبري.
فما خير عشاق ليس يقتل أهل كما قتل العاشق في سالف الدهر.
فيما رب إن أهلك ولم ترو هامتي بليلي أمت لا قبر أفتر من قبري.
ولو أنتي إذ كان وقت حمامها أحكم في عمري لقاسمتها عمري
فقل لنا الفقدان في ساعة معا مفت ولا تدري وماتت ولا أدري.
رضيت بقتلي في هواها لأنني أري حبيما وطاعتها فرضوا.
كاني غدا الابن رفة من سنة غيرما سدحت عليه المشارع.
تخس من يهدوا ماء حياته فلا الشرب مبذول ولا هو نافع.
فإن تلك ليلي بالعراق مرضية في بحر الحتوف غريق.
بري جسدي وعوفي ومعصتي فلم بقّ إلا أعظم وعوقي.
فلا تحملني إن هلكت ترحموا على فقدي الروح ليس يعوق
وخطوا على قبري إذا متن واكتبوا قليل لاحظات وهو عشيق.
ألا هل إلى شم الخزامي ونظرت إلى قربى قبل الممات سميل
فأشرب من ماء المحبلاء شربة يداوى بها قبل الممات عليل
168
ولو شهدتي حين تحضر مبتني جلا سكرات الموت على كلامها
كذلك ما كان المحبون قبلنا إذا مات موتها تزار هامها
فيا ليتنا نحيا جميعا فإن نست تجار في الهلكي عضامي عظامها
191
تمتع بليلي إنما أنتم هامة من الهمد يدعو كل يوم حمامها
192
اموت إذا شحت وأحيا إذا دنت وتبعت أحزاني الصبا ونسيما
195
عجبت لعروة العذري أمس أحاديثا لقوم يعد قوم
وعروة مات مستريحا وهأندبا أموت بكل يوم
197
خليلى كفا لا تلوها ماها ولا تتثا صبا بلومدا طلما
198
لو أن لك الدنيا وما عدلت به سواها، وليلي بناء عنك بينها
لكنت إلى ليلي فقرا وإنما يفدو إليها وفنسك حينها
208
خليلى إن ميت أو مكمل ليلي بحاجيج فامضية وذراني
أقل حاجتي وحدي فلأرى حاجة قضيت علي هول وخوف مكان
واين أحق الناس مني نحبة وشوقه له من لو يشاء شفاني
ومن قادني للموت حتى إذا صفت مشواره بم الزعاف سفاني
211
إني أرى رجعات الحب تقلتي وكان في بدنا ما كان يكيني
لا خير في الحب ليست فيه فارعة كان صاحبها في نزع موتون
216
إذا ما استطال الدهر يا أم مالك فشأن المنايا القاضيات وشانها
229
The aspects of bodily presence in *al-ghazal al-‘udhrī* (Diwan Jamil Buthaynah)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>The Corporeal: description of the beloved’s body</th>
<th>Desire: Longing for physical contact with the beloved</th>
<th>Gestures: Secret body language as a means of communication</th>
<th>The phantom of the beloved</th>
<th>The place of the beloved</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>من الخمرات البيض اخلص 17 لونها ثلاثي عدوا لا يجد ما يعيبها 17</td>
<td>ودت ولا تغني الوئاملداني وفتي من الدنيا وأني نسيبيها 17</td>
<td>حلت يمينا بأني نبيت صادقا فإن نسيبي من الدنيا وأني نسيبيها 17</td>
<td>إن امتلك سري يا بتن طيف تأويها 16 فهدت في القلب شوقا وأنصبا عجيبته أن زار في النوم مضجعه ولو زارني مستيقظا 19</td>
<td>وأهواء الأرض عندي حيث حلت بجدب في المنزل أو خصيب 16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بلغ قد سفين المسرك منه مسارك البشام ومن غروب ومن مجري غوارب أفراح شتات النبت في عاص خصيب 18 24</td>
<td>هل الحائم العطشان مسقى بشريه من المزن نروي ما به فترج فقى ففتشي إن سفيناك شربة تخير أعداني بها فتوح 27</td>
<td>لكل حديث عندهن بشاشة وكل قبر عندهن شديد 27</td>
<td>إن المنتزه هاجت أطربي 18 واستعجمت أيتها بجوبي 18</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ترى البرز يكره الريح إذا جريب وثبلة إن بيتها الريح تفرح يدي أشر كالأخوان يزيده ندى المظل إلا أنه هو أملح 21 26</td>
<td>وإن عروض الوصل بني بريه وإن سهانه باقلي لكد 26</td>
<td>وطرف إما جنتنا فأختارنا فذاع الريحين يدلم يتصدر وأفيض إذا أقت لعشقوها وطراء بغض إن ذلك إستم. فما لم حمل طرفك نحنها إذا جنت حتى كاد حبك يظهر 42</td>
<td>إن خيال من بنيتة طابع حللو مشرق إلى شقاق يرث 68 من تلال الحجر حتى تخلصت في أعمال طفلك نحنها إذا جنت 68</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>رمتني بهما يفصيلة الكحل لم ينض ظاهره جلي وهو في القلب جاري 23 47</td>
<td>ولكن جعلت اللحظ بني وبيها كلف يذكرك يا بنتي صد 33 47</td>
<td>ولني لاستغفا وما بي نعمة رسول أنها م تن ضنام 98 لعل لقاء في المنام يكون 98</td>
<td>يغير إذا غارت فواعدها وإن تكين بنجد به مني القواد إلى نجد 31</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>سبتي بعيني جذير وسط ريب وصرد كفائر اللحين وجدت تريف كما زالت إلى سفائها 33</td>
<td>وإن كتبت تهوي أو تريد لفان من ظاهرة ظاهر لئنا تلك 21 33</td>
<td>وإن كتبت تهوي وارد التممن الدنيا لدي وأملح 33</td>
<td>رأيت كأني البيت تبعض أهله وقابل في البيت الذي أنت هاجر 48</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
فيما ليت شعري هل ابيتها ليلة
كيلنتنا حتى نرى ساطع الفجر
توجب علينا بالحديث وتارة تجد
علينا بالرضاب من النغ

خيلي عوجا اليوم حتي تسلم
على عذبة الأذباب طيبة النشر

هي البدو حسناء النضاء كواكب
وشأن ما بين الكواكب والبدر
لقد فضلت حسنا على الناس
مثلما على ألف شهر فضلت ليلة
القدر

ومالي لا أبيك وفي الأيك نائح
وقد فارقتني شختة الكنج
والخصر

ذكرت مقامي ليلة البان قابضا
على كف حوراء المدام كالمدر

وركان طرفها على علل الكرى
والمجموعا قد دنا تغور
بستاف ريح مدام مجونة
بكلم ملكا او سحيف العين

واخر عبر لي بها يوم ودعت
ولاج لها خد ملح ومحجر

مة الي الوشاح ميدود

كيف المست ليت شعري هل ابتين ليلة
كيلنتنا حتى نرى ساطع الفجر
توجب علينا بالحديث وتارة تجد
علينا بالرضاب من النغ

خيلي عوجا اليوم حتي تسلم
على عذبة الأذباب طيبة النشر

هي البدو حسناء النضاء كواكب
وشأن ما بين الكواكب والبدر
لقد فضلت حسنا على الناس
مثلما على ألف شهر فضلت ليلة
القدر

ومالي لا أبيك وفي الأيك نائح
وقد فارقتني شختة الكنج
والخصر

ذكترت مقامي ليلة البان قابضا
على كف حوراء المدام كالمدر

وركان طرفها على علل الكرى
والمجموعا قد دنا تغور
بستاف ريح مدام مجونة
بكلم ملكا او سحيف العين

واخر عبر لي بها يوم ودعت
ولاج لها خد ملح ومحجر

مة الي الوشاح ميدود
لا أثرت فتلي وكان مصححا بثينة صدعا يوم طار رداؤها

109

كان فتيل السمك خالص نشرها تعل به أردنها والمرافق تقوم إذا قامت به من فراشها وبدع به من حزنها من تعاقب 68

قناة من المنزان ما فوق حقوها بما تحته منها نقا يتصف لها مقلتا ريم وجدية وكتب كطي السارية أليف 59

لاطعية في الكشك ذات شوى خدل 71

تسوكي بقضبان الأراك ملجأ يشعشع فيه الفارسي المروق 67

وحسن خلق الله حيدة ومقلة تشبه في النسان بالشادان الطفل 85

فما طبيبة أدام لحافة الحشا بصراحه أو أفردت طياها تراعي قليلا ثم تحمي إلى طلا إذا ما دعته وبلغت دعاها بأحسن منها مقة ومقدما إذا جئت لا يستطيع اجتلاها وتبسم عن غر عذاب كانها قناة تعلت لينها واستوواها

نعم لحاف الين المقرر يجعلها شعراة حين يخشى الفر والصرد 118
إذا قعدت في البيت يشرق بيتها وان برتز زداد حسا فانها قطف ألوى للحجال يزينها مع اللذ منها جسمها وحياؤها.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>صادت فوادي بعينها ومبنيها كأنه حين أبنته لنا يرد عن بكر كأن ذكي السك خالته والزنجيبيل وماء المزن والشهد وحيد أنما تحنوه إلى رشا أغنى لم يعبها مثل ولد رجاحة رخصة الأطراف داعمة تكاد من بدنه في البيت تنضج خذل مخللها وعث مؤزرا هفاء لم</th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>
| بدي أشر كالأفواح يزينه ندي الطل إلا أنه هو أملج كان خزامي عالج في ثابتها بعيد الكرى فأه مسك نذبح كان الذي يبترها من ثابتها على رملة من عالج متبطح.. من الخفترات البيض خود كانها إلا ما شئت شبرا من الأرض تترج منعمة لا يجرذ الثور بينها وبين أحادي تور بها ظل بجرح إذا ضربتها الريح في المرط أفلت مامها والريح في المرط أفضح ترى الزل حذرت الريح إذا جرت وبثة إن هبت لها الريح تفرح.

| 111 |  |
| 113 |  |
يعدها بوس ولا ويد هيفاء مقيلة عجزاء مديرة تمت فليس برى في حلقي أود 118

من اللف أفخاذًا إذا ما تقلبت من الليل وهنا أقتلتها الروادف قطوف الخطى عند الضحى عيلة الشوى إذا استعمل المشي العمال النحاف أنة كان الريق منها مدامة بعد الكرى أو ذاكه المسك ذائف

سبيك بمسحول ترف أثروه إذا ابعثت في طيب ريح وفي برد كان شقيق الراح خالط ريقها وصف غريض المزن صفق بالشهد تارج بمسك الأح ثابتها إذا عرقت فيها وبالعنبر الورد

ملفجة الأتيب لو أن ريقها يداوي به المومي لقاموا من الفبر
The physical presence of the lover himself

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Crying</th>
<th>Fainting</th>
<th>Sickness</th>
<th>Prematurely grey-haired</th>
<th>Insomniac</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>لقد ذرفت عيني وطال سفوحها وأصبح من نفس سقيما صححها 22</td>
<td>ارجمني فقد لبست فحسبي بعض هذا الداء يا ب.TH</td>
<td>تقول بيتنا إذ أصررت قننا من الشعر الأحمر برأسي كرته وأودي الشيب فقتلت محببا لها بثينة طبي 44</td>
<td>かかる في لحى لحزن قد يضحيه فما أغمض غلما غير تهابع 53</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>خليلي ما ألقى من الوجد باطن ودمعي بما أحقت الغد شهيد ألا قد أرى واننا أن رب عبرة إذا الدار شتيل بيننا سترد 25</td>
<td>الا تتقين الله في جلب عاشق له كبد حرى عليك تقطع 52</td>
<td>تشيب روعات الفراق مفاريق مندذن شدة الاشتياق وذكر الحبيب بعد الفراق 70</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ومالي لا أتك في الألب ناح وقد فارقتني شختة الشبح والخصر 37</td>
<td>يا بثن جودي وكاف عاضقا دفا واعفي بذلك أسقفي وأوجاعي 53</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>فكنت ولم أملك إليها صباية أهيم وفاض الدم مني على نحري 38</td>
<td>تعلقتها والجسم مني مصحح فمزال يعنى حبل جمل وأضعف إلى اليوم حتى سل جسمي وشفي وأذكر من نفسى الذي كنت أعرف 59</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>قل ليحجب عيني عن دام البكا ولن يلمزوا ما قد يزع مضمي إلى الله أنشكو ما ألقى من الجو عين من حرق تعتاني وزنر من كرب للحب في باطن الحشا وليل طويل الحزن غير قصير سأبكي على نفسى بعين غزيرة بكاء حزين في الوثاث أسير 46</td>
<td>أيا ديج الشمال ما ترينى أهيم وأتني بادي النحول 84</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>لاحت لعينك من بثينة نار فدموع عينك درة وغزار 48</td>
<td>أفرح أكيد المحبين كالذي أرى كبدي من ذكر بثينة تفرج 114</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>وما ذكرت النفس يا بين مرة من الدهر إلا كادت النفس تتلف وإلا اعتنتي زقرة واستكانة وجد لها سجل من الدموع يذرف 61</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>كلانا بكى أو كاد يبكي صباية إلى إله واستعجلت عبرة فيلي 73</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>إذا خطرت من ذكر بثينة خطرة عصنتي شؤون العين فانهل مارها 109</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>إذا ما كررت الطرف نحووك رده من البعيد فقبض من الدموع يشمل 78</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>كان دموع العين يوم تحملت بثينة بسفها الرشاش معين 97</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**The death:**

أفي كل يوم أنت محدث صبوبة تموت لها بدلت غيرك من قلب 18

ولو أن داع ملك يدعو جنازتي وكنى على أيدي الرجال حبيت 20

أردد صلاها وترديد قلتي وشتي بين قلتي والصلاة 22
الآ لينتي نحيا جميعا وإن نمت يجاور في الموتى ضريحي ضريحها
فما أنا في طول الحياة براغب إذا قيل قد سوي عليها صفيحها 22

هل الحالم العطشان يمسى بشرية من المزن تروي ما يفتيح
فقالت فخشى إن سفينك شربة تخرب أعدائي بها فتنوع
اذن فأباختني المنايا وقadio إلى أجلي عضب السلاح سفوح 24

لكل حديث عندهن بشاشة وكل قليل عندهن شهيد 27

على أن من قد مات صادف راحة وما لفوادى من رواح ولا رشد 30

قد مات قمي أنه متحرك وصاحبه مرقص وآشفي من عروة المكد
وكلهم كان من عشق منيتي وقد وجدت بها فوق الذي وجدوا
إلي لأحبس أو قد كنت أعلم أن سوف توردني الحوض الذي وردوا 32

اعوذ بك اللهم إن شئت النوى بثينة في ادبي حياتي ولا حضري
ويا قارب إذا مات بيني وبينها فيا بسيرة يا موني إذا جاورت قبري 36

يا لينتي ألقى المنية بثينة إن كان يوم فانكم لم يقدر 39

بهاك ما عشت الفواد فإن أفتات يتبع صداح بين الأقر 40

الآ تتقين الله في قتل عاشق له كبد حرى عليك تقطع 52

لولا الذي أرمحي منه وأمله لقد أشاع بموتي عندها ناعي
يا بني جودي وكافي عاشقين دعفا واشقي بتلك أسقامي وآجاعي
لأني لا أصطفي بالحب غيركم حتى أغيث تحت الرمس بالفاع
قد كنت عنكم بعد الادار ممتنعا حتى دعائي لحنيي منكم داع 53
The aspects of bodily presence in *al-ghazal al-‘udhri* (Qays Lubnā)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>The Corporeal: description of the beloved’s body</th>
<th>Desire: Longing for physical contact with the beloved</th>
<th>Gestures: Secret body language as a means of communication</th>
<th>The phantom of the beloved</th>
<th>The place of the beloved</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>خذوا بدمي – إن مت، كل خريدة مريضة جفن العين والطرف فاتر 46</td>
<td>ولحائم العطشان را بريفها والمرح المختال خمر ومسكر 47</td>
<td>قد زارتني طبقكم ليلا فارقني فيت للتلوق أذري الدمع تهتنا 109</td>
<td>وما أحببت ارضكم ولكن أقبل إثر من وطئ التربا 19</td>
<td>كان هيبه الريح من نحو أرضكم يثير قنات السلك والعنبر الندا 41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>إذا ما شنت شبرًا من الأرض أزحفت من البحر حتى ما تزيد على شير لها كل يرتج منها إذا مشت ومتين كغنَّس اللبان مضطمر الخصر 52</td>
<td>لعمري من أمسي وانت ضجيجه من الناس ما اشتهر عليه المضاجع 63</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ربيباً لواضحة الجبين خريرة كالشم إضطهت رخيم المنطق 81</td>
<td>وإنني لمشتق إلى ريح جيبها كما اشتقت أذري إلى جنة الخل 124</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*The Corporeal:* Description of the Beloved’s Body

- خذوا بدمي – إن مت، كل خريدة مريضة جفن العين والطرف فاتر 46
- وإذا ما شنت شبرًا من الأرض أزحفت من البحر حتى ما تزيد على شير لها كل يرتج منها إذا مشت ومتين كغنَّس اللبان مضطمر الخصر 52
- ربيباً لواضحة الجبين خريرة كالشم إضطهت رخيم المنطق 81

*Desire: Longing for Physical Contact with the Beloved*

- ولحائم العطشان را بريفها والمرح المختال خمر ومسكر 47

*Gestures: Secret Body Language as a Means of Communication*

- قد زارتني طبقكم ليلا فارقني فيت للتلوق أذري الدمع تهتنا 109

*The Phantom of the Beloved*

- وما أحببت ارضكم ولكن أقبل إثر من وطئ التربا 19

*The Place of the Beloved*

- كان هيبه الريح من نحو أرضكم يثير قنات السلك والعنبر الندا 41
شهدت على نفسي بأنك غادة
رداً وأن الوجه منك عتق
90
وما حانمات حمن يوماً وليلة
على الماء يختص العصبي حوان عراقي لا يصدرون عنه
لوجهه ولا هن من بدر الحياض
دوناً بأجده مني حرق شوق ولولة عليك ولكن العدو
缎اني 155

يا أكمل الناس من قرن إلى قدم
واحسن الناس ذا ثوب وغيماً
نعم الضيج بعدين الدوم تجلبه
البك ممتلناً نوماً ويقطناً

The physical presence of the lover himself

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Crying</th>
<th>Fainting</th>
<th>Sickness</th>
<th>Prematurely grey-haired</th>
<th>Insomniac</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>
| هل الحب إلا عبرة ثم زفرة وحر
على الأحشاء ليس له برد
وبيض دموع تستهل إذا بدا لنا
علم من أرضكم لم يكن يبدو
43 |
| لقد لاقت من كلفي بلبني بلاء
ما أسيل به الشرايا
20 |
| وما أنا إلا بانت ليبيها بهاءج إذا
ما استقلت بالنيلام المضائع
 وكيف ينام المرء مستشر
الجوى ضجيج الأمسي فيه تكاس
رواد 59 |
| وهجت فذى عيني لنبي مريضة
إذا ذكرت فاضت مدامعها نجري
50 |
| مرضت فجاوزوا بالمعالج والرقي وقالوا بصير بالدواء
مجرب أناني قداؤاني وطال
اختلافها إلى أعياء الرقب
والخطيب ولم يغن علي ما يعد
طائلاً ولا ما يمنيني الطبيب
المجري 23 |
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>رقم</th>
<th>جملة</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>51</td>
<td>قلم يمنعو عيني من دام البكا ولن يذهبوا ما قد أجن ضميري</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>53</td>
<td>فيها من لقلب لا يفيق من الهموي ويا من تعني بالصباية تدمع</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>66</td>
<td>هما برحا بي معلمين كالهما فواد وعين مآها الدهر دامع إذا نحن أنفسنا البكاء عشية فمو عدنا قرن من الشمس طالع</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>74</td>
<td>بيت والهميا ليبني ضجبي وجرت من نأبت عني دوم عم</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>92</td>
<td>إذا عنت عزبة الهوي أو تركته أنت عبرات بالدمع تسوخ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>112</td>
<td>بكيت لكم بكبيت وكل ألف إذا بانت قريبته بكاهًا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>129</td>
<td>إذا ذكرت لبى تأوه واشتكي تأوه محوم عليه الليل بيبت ويسحقي تحت ظل منية به رمق تبكي عليه القابل</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>131</td>
<td>فإن انهمال العين بالدموع كما ذكرتك وحدي خالياً لسريع</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>139</td>
<td>للحب إنا نتيب بالمعنى شحوبًا وتعري من يديه الأشاحم</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

النظام والجما النور...

337
The death:

في أني مات قبل فراقها وله ترجع فوات القضية ميت فوفنان للكيف منك فاني كانت بي قد سيذري، قضية 33

لقد عدناني يا حب لبني فقع إما موت أو حياة فإن الموت أروح من حياة تدوم على التباعد والشئ

وقال الأقران ترى أنها فقدت له إذن حان وفاني 34

وعذبه الهوى حتى براء كبري الفين بالسفن القدما

فكان يذبي جرع المنان ولو ساء ذلك لاستراحا 37

وفي عروة الهنر يد مت أسوة وعمرو بن عجلان الذي قتلته هند

وبي مثل ما قد نانه غير أنني إلى أجل لا ينتهي وقته بعد 34

وحبة ياء بالجسم واللون ظاهر حب لدي نسي من الروح اللفت

وحبة هو الدفع اليا بهبته له ذكر تدعو علي فأيت

فلا أنا منه مستريح فموت ولا هو على ما قد حبيت مخفف

فيا جزها مازلت حتى فنان ولا أنت إن طال البلا لي منصف 78

ولو أنني قدرت غادة قالت: غدري ومهاء مقتلاها يسيل

نحرت النفس حين سمعت منها مقالتها وذاك لها قليل 100

ومن فادنى للموت حتى إذا صفت مشاربه السم الزعاف سقاني 156
The aspects of bodily presence in *al-ghazal al-‘udhri* (Diwan Kuthayyir ‘Azzah)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>The Corporeal: description of the beloved’s body</th>
<th>Desire: Longing for physical contact with the beloved</th>
<th>Gestures: Secret body language as a means of communication</th>
<th>The phantom of the beloved</th>
<th>The place of the beloved</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>هضيم الحشا رود المطا بختريه جميل عليها الأذني المنشب</td>
<td>لعزة هم النفس منهن لو ترى إليها سبلا أو تلم فنصوقي 42</td>
<td>يجىء برياه الصبا كل ليلة وتجمعنا الأحلام في كل مرد</td>
<td>طاف الخيال لأهل عزة موها بعد الدهو فهاج لي أحزانى</td>
<td>واتي بيوتنا حولكم لا أحبها وأكثر هجر البيت وهو جنبي</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>وذي أشتر عذب الرضاب كانه إذا غار أردى التأذ السواح مجاجة نجل في أباقير صفضت بصف العوادي شعشتته المحتاج 70</td>
<td>والمتين ينشر أن تمس عظامه 76 مسا ويخلد أن يراك خلودا</td>
<td>فاقسمت لا تنسى لعزة نظرها لنكا بادي الوجد مني المجمعا عشية أومت والعيون حواسى إلى برفع الكف الا 197 تكلما</td>
<td>خليلي هذا ربع عزة فاعقلا قلوصيما ثم أبكى حلت وسا ترابا كان قد سد جلدها وبيتا وفلا حيث بانت وطلت ولا تبى أني يمحو الله علما ذنوبا إذا صلتما حيث صلت 54</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>أغرك منها أن ذلك عدنا وإسجد عينيك الصبدين راب 90</td>
<td>أحب ظعينة وبنات نفي فيها لا يلتن بها صواوي 90</td>
<td>إذا قيل هذا دار عزة قادنى إليك الهوى واحتدنتي البياد 99</td>
<td>إذا قيل هذا دار عزة قادنى إليك الهوى واحتدنتي البياد 99</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>من السحور يوش كف جندها سبيلا ما قد الحلي واضح 71</td>
<td>واني لاسمو بالوصل إلى التي يكون شفاء ذكرها وازديارها 109</td>
<td>تزور بوتنا حولها ما تتحبا وتهجره سفيا لم أنت هاجر 103</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>من الخزرات البيض ود جليسها إذا ما انقصت أحدثه لو تعبدها 84</td>
<td>واني لستاني ولولا طمعاتي بزعه قد جمعت بين الضرات 110</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ويوم الخيل قد سفعت وكت فرده العصب عن رئلا براد</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
وعن نجاه تدعم في بياض إذا
دممت وتنتظر في سواد وعن
منكوس في العقص جعل
أنيث النبات ذي عفر جعاد
انتهى إذ تودع وهي باد مقلدها
كما برق الصبيهم 103

بجيد كجيد الزرن حال تزينة
عذراء مسترخي العقاس
صاحبها ثقوث إزار الخز منها
برمه رداً كساءها هائل الكرب
مورها 106

فما روضة بالحزن طيبة الثرى
بم الندى جرحلها وعرارها
بأطب من أردن عزة موها
وقد أوقدت بالمدل الرطب
دارها 110

منعى أما ثلاث نطاقها فجل
وأما الخصر منها فأهيف 124

كانه حين مار المألقيان به
تحلى من أسلاكه نسق للعبير
على أصدامها عرق كانه
بجنوب المجر العلق 130

فما طيبة أدماء واضحة الفرا
تنص إلى برد الطلال غلالها
تحت بقرنها برر أرثكة
وتطول بطلقيها إذا الغصن
طالها بأحسن منها مقلة ومقالا
وجيت إذا دانت تتوسط شكلها
153
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>لو أن عزة خاصمت شمس الضحى في الحسن عند موقف القضي لها 153</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>سبته يغذب الريح صاف غروبه رقيق التنانير بارد لم يفلل وأسود ميال على جيد ظبة من الأدم حواء المدامع مغزل وانبع برافق كان اهتزاه إذا انصفت لبروع هزة منصل...بطيب من فيها لمن ذاق طعمه 181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>وغال فصول الدرب ذي العرض خلفها وأتعبت الحجلين حتى نقصها وكفشت سواريها فلا يلتوانها لدن جاور الكفين أن يقدما واندي علي الميمنين وحاكاه عنكاب كرم قد تنل فاعاما من الهواء لا تخرى إذا الريح القصقت علي متنها ذا الطرتين المنمنما 197</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The physical presence of the lover himself

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Crying</th>
<th>Fainting</th>
<th>Sickness</th>
<th>Prematurely grey-haired</th>
<th>Insomniac</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>وراحعت نفسى واعترنتي صبابة وقاست دموعي عبرة خشية النوى 29</td>
<td>وما زلت من ذكرى حتى كانتي أمي بأكادف الديار سليب 36</td>
<td>ولي فذ عهد بني مريضة إذا سمته الهجران ظلت تصدع 116</td>
<td>أببت نجية للهموم مسهدًا إذا أوقدت نحوه بيلا وقودها 85</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>وما كنت أدي قبل عزة ما البكا ولا موجعبات القلب حتى تولت 54</td>
<td>إيا ذكرتها النفس ظلت كأنها عليها من الورد اتهامي أفك 159</td>
<td>وفي منك أيام إذا شحنت النوى طوال وليلات تزول نجومها 206</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>وفي زرفات لبدين فلتتني توالي التي تأتي المنى قد تولت 56</td>
<td>إذا بصرت بها العينان نجت بمعهمها مع النظر اللحوج 64</td>
<td>لعمري لنن كان الفواض من النوى بغي سفما إنذ لسقليم فإما ترني اليوم أدي جلالة فإنا لعمري تحت ذاك كليم 110</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>كان دموع عيني يوم بانت دلالة بها فلت مهبب يربع بها غادة الورد ساق سريه المتح بكرته مريح 65</td>
<td>وإن بجوفي منك دا مخاما ووجوف مما بي عليك سليم 202</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>لعزة عاج الشوق فالتلمع سافح مغان ورسد قد قامدم ماصح 76</td>
<td>تقول ابنة الضماري مالك شاحب وقد تنبر لعين فيك المحاسن 223</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>أهوف لام العين أمعن لعله بما لا يرى من غانب الوحد يشهد 78</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
لقد هجرت سعيدة وطال صدوعها وعاود عيني دمعها وسهرها 84
أغاضر لو شهدت غادة بنتم جنوه العائدات على وسادي 90
إنت عبرات من سجوم كانه غمامه ينكم استهل فقعل 115
واقضت دموع العين حتى كانها بوادي القري من يابس التغر تكحل إذا قلت أسلو غارت العين بالبكا غراء ومدتها مدأمع حل 159
إذا ذكرت ليلى تنشك عبارة تعل بها العينان بعد نهول 177
كان دموع العين واها الهلي وعت ما غرب يوم ذاك سجيل تكفنها حرق تواكمل خرزها فارخينه والويل غير بجبل ..فقالوا نعت فاختر من الصبر والبكا فقتل البكا أشفي إذن لغليل 180
وإن شرحتي يوما بكنيت وأإن دنت تدللت واستكرتها باعتراله 192
إذا ذفرت عبادي اعتل بالفدى وعزة لو يدرى الطبيب قداهما 204
The death:

وقد قتلت نفسا بغير جريرة وليس لها عقل ولا من يقدها

فأقيدي دما يا أم عمرو هرقته فيكفلك فعل القاتل المتعمد

ركانون cui الإذنة فهو قاتل من أجله هنا هامة اليوم أو غد

هي العيش ما لاقتلك يوما بودها وموت إذا لااقتلك منها ازورها

إذا سمت نفسي هجرها واجتنبها رآت غمرات الموت فيما أسومها

The aspects of bodily presence in al-ghazal al-‘udhri (Diwān ‘Urwah)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>The Corporeal: description of the beloved’s body</th>
<th>Desire: Longing for physical contact with the beloved</th>
<th>Gestures: Secret body language as a means of communication</th>
<th>The phantom of the beloved</th>
<th>The place of the beloved</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ولن كان بردى الماء عطشان صاديا</td>
<td>وما هو إلا أن أراها فجاءة</td>
<td>تأتي من وبدت وترود robe Aloa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ولن كان بردى الماء عطشان صاديا</td>
<td>وما هو إلا أن أراها فجاءة</td>
<td>تأتي من وبدت وترود robe Aloa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>منغامة لم يأت بين شبابها ولا</td>
<td>وما هو إلا أن أراها فجاءة</td>
<td>تأتي من وبدت وترود robe Aloa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>منغامة لم يأت بين شبابها ولا</td>
<td>وما هو إلا أن أراها فجاءة</td>
<td>تأتي من وبدت وترود robe Aloa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>عهدها بالثلي ثمان 46</td>
<td>وما هو إلا أن أراها فجاءة</td>
<td>تأتي من وبدت وترود robe Aloa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>عهدها بالثلي ثمان 46</td>
<td>وما هو إلا أن أراها فجاءة</td>
<td>تأتي من وبدت وترود robe Aloa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>كان وشاحه إذا ما ارتدتهما</td>
<td>وما هو إلا أن أراها فجاءة</td>
<td>تأتي من وبدت وترود robe Aloa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>لوقت عمانا منيرة سلاما</td>
<td>وما هو إلا أن أراها فجاءة</td>
<td>تأتي من وبدت وترود robe Aloa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>بعض يابان لها ملتقاها</td>
<td>وما هو إلا أن أراها فجاءة</td>
<td>تأتي من وبدت وترود robe Aloa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The physical presence of the lover himself

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Crying</th>
<th>Fainting</th>
<th>Sickness</th>
<th>Prematurely grey-haired</th>
<th>Insomniac</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>غليتك بالبكاء لان تيلي اوصله وانك تهجعن33</td>
<td>وقتت لعفر اليمامة دانني فانك إن ايراتني لطيب 24</td>
<td>سوية</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>وفي كل يوم أنت رام بلادها يعينين أنساناه غرفان وعيناي ما أوفيت نشرة فنتظرا بماقيهما إلا هما تكلف 34</td>
<td>فواكيدا أست رفانتا كنما يلدعا بالموقدات طبيب 25</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>على كيدي من حب عفراء قرحة وعيناي من وجد بها تكفا ن 36</td>
<td>ب كياس او داء الهمام شرته فبايك عني لا ين بك ما بيا 53</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>وأوثرتني غما وكربا وحسرة وأورثت عيني دانم الهمان 41</td>
<td>منى تكسا عن الفيص تينا بي الضر من عفراء يا فيتن وتعترفنا لحما قليلا وأعذبنا دقاقا وفليا دانم الخفان 36</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>تحملت زفرات الضحى فاطفلها ومالي بفزرات العتي يدان 45</td>
<td>جعلت لعفر اليمامة حكمه وعارف نحن إن هما شفياني 39</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>وأذن تحملا لحما قليلا وأعظمما دفقة وقلبا دائم الخفان</td>
<td>42</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>أذن تحملا لحما قليلا وأعظمما دفقة وقلبا دائم الخفان</td>
<td>42</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>أذن تحملا لحما قليلا وأعظمما دفقة وقلبا دائم الخفان</td>
<td>42</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>أذن تحملا لحما قليلا وأعظمما دفقة وقلبا دائم الخفان</td>
<td>42</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>أذن تحملا لحما قليلا وأعظمما دفقة وقلبا دائم الخفان</td>
<td>42</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>أذن تحملا لحما قليلا وأعظمما دفقة وقلبا دائم الخفان</td>
<td>42</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>أذن تحملا لحما قليلا وأعظمما دفقة وقلبا دائم الخفان</td>
<td>42</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>أذن تحملا لحما قليلا وأعظمما دفقة وقلبا دائم الخفان</td>
<td>42</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>أذن تحملا لحما قليلا وأعظمما دفقة وقلبا دائم الخفان</td>
<td>42</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The death:

وما عجبي موت المحبين في الهوى ولكن بقاء العاشقين عجيب 26

من كان من أخواتي بالكبا أبدا فاليوم إن أراني اليوم مفوضا

يسعتني فاني غير سامعه إذا غلت رقات الهموم موعوضا

ألا يا غربا دمنة الدار بينا أبالصورم من عفراء تنتحيان؟

فإن كان حقا ما تقولا فذاها بلحمي إلى وكريما فكلاني

إذن تحملا لحما قليلا وأعظمما دفقة وقلبا دائم الخفان

كلاني أكلا لم بر الناس مثله ولا تهضما حبي وازداني

ولا يعلمن الناس ما كان ميتني ولا يعطمن الطر ما تذران 42

فياليت عمي يوم فرق بيننا سقي السم ممزوجا بسب يمان

فياليت محيانا جميعا وليتنا إذا نحن متنا ضمنا كفان 44